

EVERYMAN'S LIBRARY
EDITED BY ERNEST RHYS

POETRY AND
THE DRAMA

GHOSTS, AND OTHER PLAYS,
BY HENRIK IBSEN, TRANS-
LATED BY 'R FARQUHARSON
SHARP

THIS IS NO 552 OF *EVERYMAN'S*
LIBRARY THE PUBLISHERS WILL
BE PLEASED TO SEND FREELY TO ALL
APPLICANTS A LIST OF THE PUBLISHED
AND PROJECTED VOLUMES ARRANGED
UNDER THE FOLLOWING SECTIONS

TRAVEL & SCIENCE & FICTION
THEOLOGY & PHILOSOPHY
HISTORY & CLASSICAL
FOR YOUNG PEOPLE
ESSAYS & ORATORY
POETRY & DRAMA
BIOGRAPHY
REFERENCE
ROMANCE



THE ORDINARY EDITION IS BOUND
IN CLOTH WITH GILT DESIGN AND
COLOURED TOP THERE IS ALSO A
LIBRARY EDITION IN REINFORCED CLOTH

J M DENT & SONS LTD

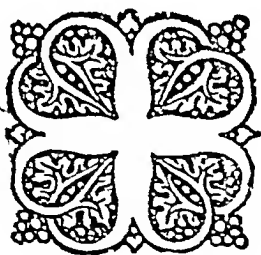
ALDINE HOUSE, BEDFORD STREET, LONDON, W C 2

E P DUTTON & CO INC.

286-302 FOURTH AVENUE, NEW YORK

POETS
ARE
THE
TRUMPETS
WHICH SING
TO BATTLE
POETS
ARE THE
UNACKNOWLEDGED
LEGISLATORS
OF THE
WORLD SHELLEY

GHOSTS &
TWO.OTHER
PLAYS © BY
HENRIK ©
© IBSSEN



LONDON & TORONTO
PUBLISHED BY J M DENT
& SONS LTD & IN NEW YORK
BY E P DUTTON & CO

All rights reserved

FIRST PUBLISHED IN THIS EDITION
REPRINTED

1911
1912, 1914, 1917, 1923, 1926,
1930

INTRODUCTION

The Warriors at Helgeland (*Hærmændene paa Helgeland*), the first of the three plays included in the present volume, was written in 1857, when Ibsen (who was then in his thirtieth year) was at Christiania. Both in conception and execution it is an enormous advance on the immature efforts which had preceded it, and, apart from its own very considerable merits, poetic and dramatic, it is noteworthy as foreshadowing two aspects of the later genius that could produce *Peer Gynt* and *The Wild Duck*. Judged as a poetic romance, it has great charm if approached in the necessary spirit of simplicity. As a piece of dramatic construction it is admirable, and already characteristic of the later Ibsen in its methods. A preface which Ibsen wrote in 1876 for a German translation of the play affords interesting evidence of his sane dramatic sense. After remarking that the Volsung Saga was the source of his inspiration for the play, he goes on to say that he was nevertheless convinced that "the idealised and, to a certain extent, impersonal figures in the Sagas" were unsuitable for representation on the stage of to-day, and that, apart from this, it had been his aim in this play to present "not mythical personages, but Scandinavian life in olden times". To realise the wisdom of this, one has only to compare the human interest possessed by the characters in *The Warriors at Helgeland* with the almost entire lack of it in the heroes and heroines of Wagner's *Ring der Nibelungen*.

Ibsen offered the play to the Royal Theatre at Copenhagen and to the Christiania Theatre, and both promptly rejected it as unsuitable to the tastes of the public. It was not until 1861, after a tentative performance at Bergen, that the play was produced at the Christiania Theatre. It was not seen in Copenhagen until some fourteen years later. The publication of the translation referred to above gave the play a footing in Germany

where it was fairly often played after that date. Its only production in London, so far, has been that at the Imperial Theatre in 1903, during Ellen Terry's management, when it was played under the title of *The Vikings*.

The remaining two plays here translated, *Ghosts* (*Gengangere*) and *An Enemy of the People* (*En Folkefiende*), are closely connected in their origin. *Ghosts* was written in 1881, when Ibsen was in Italy, and was published at the close of that year. Ibsen could not have expected—indeed did not expect—anything but a mixed reception for a play so aggressively daring in its defiance of all conventions. Thought has moved so quickly in the last thirty years, the boundary-posts (to use a favourite metaphor of Ibsen's) have been so often shifted in that time, that it requires a readjustment of one's point of view to realise fully how daring a thing it was to publish a play on such a theme as this and expect it to be performed. It is Ibsen's most remarkable polemical, and perhaps his most remarkable intellectual, effort, and, as a play, it grips the mind and extorts a close interest despite all repugnance to its subject. Softening of the brain as the result of disease inherited from a licentious father is a subject æsthetically repulsive, and must become especially so upon the boards of a theatre. No doubt the play teaches lessons that social teachers cannot emphasise too strongly, and in none of his plays has Ibsen diagnosed a social malady (a proceeding which he was fond of claiming as his aim in writing these plays) with more terrible skill. But it is a very open question whether the acted drama—which, after all, is a form of art distinguished by peculiar conditions—is a legitimate medium for the exposition of such truths. There is much virtue in the old artistic canon as to what may fitly be displayed *coram populo*.

Another criticism that may fairly be made upon *Ghosts*, judged as a play, is that it is too obviously a work with a didactic purpose. The dramatist is plainly more interested in his thesis than in his characters. The characterisation is weak, for a writer of Ibsen's rare

ability in that respect, his personages seem to be expounding the dramatist's views, rather than voicing thoughts that are the result of their own personality. And yet Ibsen wrote to a friend of his, at this time, that "in none of his plays did the author stand so entirely apart from the action as in *Ghosts* " !

However prepared he may have thought he was for the reception of the play, Ibsen was nevertheless considerably taken aback by the bitter storm of abuse it aroused in Norway. Björnson was the only public man who would say a word in his defence, and the "Liberal" press, on whose professions of broad-mindedness Ibsen had more or less relied, threw him over altogether. The result was the writing, at white heat, of *An Enemy of the People*, in which Ibsen sought to chastise his opponents with satire. Dr Stockmann, the protagonist of the play, is not intended as a portrait of the author, but the picture of his relations to his fellow-townsmen, to the Liberal press, and to the "damned compact majority"—his account of himself as "fighting at the outposts of thought," and standing at a point which in ten years' time the majority would have reached, while he himself would be far ahead again—obviously depict Ibsen's own position towards his countrymen in the matter of *Ghosts*. Writing to his friend Brandes at this time about the controversy, Ibsen complains of the Liberal press prating of freedom of action and thought, and then letting themselves become merely the slaves of their subscribers' opinions and following the crowd instead of leading it, and, again, writes of himself as being always ten years ahead of the great mass of the people—expressions identical with those used by Dr. Stockmann.

Despite its satirical intention, *An Enemy of Society* is in many ways more genial than most of Ibsen's "social dramas," thanks to the leavening of humour which he has permitted himself to mix with his scorn. The result of this, and of the fact that the play contains some theatrically effective scenes, was that it became imme-

diately popular on the Scandinavian stage—the audience, wherever it was played, no doubt considering the satire peculiarly applicable to every other community but their own

Ghosts was at first refused a hearing either in Norway, Denmark or Sweden, but in 1883 the Swedish actor August Lindberg was attracted by the play's possibilities, and toured with it—with the result that soon afterwards it was played at the Royal Theatre at Stockholm. It was a good many years, however, before it was seen in Norway or in Denmark. It was first performed (privately) in Germany in 1886, in Paris, by the Théâtre Libre, in 1890, and in London, by the Independent Theatre, in 1891. Since then it has been played in most European countries. The censor has always refused to remove his veto on its public performance in this country, probably on account of the fact that the plot of the play involves even uglier questions than hereditary disease.

An Enemy of the People was published in the winter of 1882, and performed early the following year in Norway, Sweden and Denmark, and since then has been widely played on the continent. It was first produced in England, in 1893, at the Haymarket Theatre, by Sir (then Mr.) Herbert Beerbohm Tree, who has more than once revived it.

For the verse translation of Örnulf's funeral chant over his dead sons in Act IV of *The Warriors at Helgeland*, I am indebted to the kindness of Mr. Ernest Rhys.

R. FARQUHARSON SHARP,

BIBLIOGRAPHY OF ENGLISH TRANSLATIONS

Separate Works—The Emperor and the Galilean, by C Ray, 1876 Nora (The Doll's House), by T Weber, 1880, H F Lord (with Memoir), 1882, revised edition, 1890, W Archer, 1889 Rosmerholm, by L N Parker, 1889, C Archer, 1891, revised edition, 1906 The Lady from the Sea, by E Marx-Aveling, with Introduction by E Gosse (Camelot Series), 1890, Mrs F E Archer, 1897 Ghosts, by H F Lord, revised edition, 1890 Hedda Gabler, by E Gosse, 1891 Peer Gynt, by W and C Archer (with two Tales from Asbjørnsen), 1892, I M Pagan, 1909 The Master Builder, by E Gosse and W Archer, 1893, new edition, with Bibliographical Note and Appendix, 1893 Brand, by W Wilson, 1891, C H Herford, 1894, F E Garrett, 1894 (Everyman's Library, 1915) Little Eyolf, by W Archer, 1895 John Gabriel Borkman, by W Archer, 1897 Love's Comedy, by C H Herford (Johnson and Erichsen, "Modern Plays," etc), 1900 When We Dead Awaken, by W Archer, 1900 The Wild Duck, by Mrs F E Archer, revised edition, 1905

Collections—Prose Dramas, 5 vols, edited W Archer, 1890-91; revised edition, 1900-1, with Biographical and Critical Introduction, by E Gosse (Lovell's "Series of Foreign Literature"), 1890 Collected Works, with Introduction by W Archer, 12 vols, 1906 12 The Pillars of Society and other Plays, edited by Havelock Ellis (Camelot Classics), 1888 A Doll's House, The Wild Duck, and The Lady from the Sea, translated by R F Sharp and E Marx-Aveling (Everyman's Library), 1910 The Warriors at Helgeland, An Enemy of the People, and Ghosts, translated by R F Sharp (Everyman's Library), 1911 The Pretenders, Pillars of Society, and Rosmersholm, translated by R F Sharp (Everyman's Library), 1913 Lady Inger of Ostraat, Love's Comedy, and The League of Youth (Everyman's Library), 1915 Lyrical Poems, selected and translated by R. A. Streatfeild (Vigo Cabinet Series), 1902 Correspondence, translated by M Morison, 1905

Biography—H Jaeger, Life of Henrik Ibsen, translated by Clara Bell (with translation of Verse by E Gosse), 1890, translated by W M Payne, 2nd edition, 1901, G M C Brandes, Critical Studies, translated by J Muir, 1899, E W Gosse, Ibsen (Literary Lives Series), 1907 H Macfall, Ibsen the Man, His Art and His Significance, etc, 1907 M J Moses, Henrik Ibsen the Man and his Plays, 1908

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	vii
THE WARRIORS AT HELGELAND	i
GHOSTS	67
AN ENEMY OF THE PEOPLE	143

THE WARRIORS AT HELGELAND

A Play in Four Acts

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

Örnulf of the Fjords, a chieftain in Iceland.
Thorolf, his youngest son
Sigurd the Strong, a Viking
Dagny, his wife (daughter of Örnulf)
Gunnar, a rich yeoman of Helgeland.
Hjördis, his wife (foster-sister to Dagny).
Egil, his son, four years old
Kaare, a Helgeland yeoman.
Örnulf's six elder sons.
Örnulf's and Sigurd's Men, Guests, Servants, Waiting-Women, Outlaws, etc.

(The action takes place in the time of Eric Bloody-Axe at, and in the neighbourhood of, Gunnar's house at Helgeland, in northern Norway.)

THE WARRIORS AT HELGELAND

ACT I

(SCENE — *The top of a high cliff, which in the background drops sheer down into the sea. On the left is a boat-shed, on the right hills covered with pine woods. The masts of two ships of war can be seen down in the creek below, far out on the right, rocks and islands. The sea is very rough. It is winter, with storms of wind and snow.*)

SIGURD comes up from the ships. He is dressed in a white tunic with silver belt, a blue cloak, loose hose, fur boots and a steel casque, with a short sword hanging at his side. A moment later, ÖRNULF comes into sight on the hill-side, dressed in a dark lambskin tunic, with breastplate, greaves worn over woollen hose, and fur boots, over his shoulders he wears a cloak of brown frieze, with the hood drawn over his casque in such a way as partly to conceal his face. He is tall and powerfully built, but has a long white beard, and is a little bent with age. He is armed with a round shield, a sword and a spear. SIGURD advances first, looks around and sees the boat-shed, goes quickly up to it and tries to burst open the door. ÖRNULF comes down from the higher ground, starts when he sees SIGURD, appears to recognise him, strides forward and calls out to him.)

Örnulf Stand back, warrior!

Sigurd (*turns, and lays his hand on his sword*) If I did that, it would be the first time!

Örnulf You must and shall! I need this boat-shed for a night's shelter for my men, who are half frozen.

Sigurd And I need it for a weary woman.

Örnulf My men are of more worth than your woman!

Sigurd Outlaws must be of great value in Helgeland, then!

Örnulf (*raising his spear*) You shall pay dearly for those words!

Sigurd (drawing his sword) It shall go ill with you, old man!

ÖRNULF falls upon him, SIGURD defends himself.

DAGNY and some of SIGURD's men come up from the shore, ÖRNULF's six sons appear on the higher ground on the right. DAGNY, who is dressed in a red kirtle, blue cape and fur cap, is a little in advance of the others.)

Dagny (calls down towards the ships) Up, all Sigurd's men! My husband is at blows with a stranger!

Örnulf's Sons. To our father's help! *(They come down.)*

Sigurd (to his men) Stay where you are. Surely I can deal with him alone!

Örnulf (to his sons) Let me fight in peace! *(Closing in upon SIGURD.)* I will draw your blood!

Sigurd You shall see your own first!

(Wounds him in the arm, so that his spear falls from his hand.)

Örnulf A good stroke, warrior!—

Swift the sword thou swingest,

Keen thy weapon's aim,

Sigurd's self, the Strong One,

It would put to shame!

Sigurd (with a smile) Then would he have shame and honour at the same time!

Örnulf's Sons (in tones of surprise) It is Sigurd himself! Sigurd the Strong!

Örnulf But it was a keener stroke you dealt me the night you stole away Dagny, my daughter! *(Throws back the hood from his face.)*

Sigurd and his Men Örnulf of the Fjords!

Dagny (happily, but with some signs of uneasiness) My father and my brothers!

Sigurd Get behind me

Örnulf There is no need. *(Approaches SIGURD.)* I knew you as soon as I saw you, and that was why I provoked a quarrel, I wanted to try whether they speak truly who say of you that you are the best swordsman

in Norway Now let there be peace and reconciliation between us!

Sigurd I ask nothing better, if it may be arranged

Örnulf There is my hand. You are a doughty hero, such swashing blows has no one before exchanged with old Örnulf

Sigurd (*grasping his outstretched hand*) Then may it be the last time we exchange blows! And therewith I beg you to give judgment on the matter that lies between us. Are you willing to name conditions on which we may be at one?

Örnulf That I am, and the dispute shall forthwith be settled (*To the others.*) Now shall you all know what is the matter in question. Five winters ago Sigurd and Gunnar, on a Vikings' quest, came to Iceland and received from me free hospitality for the winter. So it was that Gunnar, with craft and force, carried off my foster-daughter, Hjördis, but you, Sigurd, took Dagny, my own child, and sailed away with her. To atone for that you shall be sentenced to pay three hundred pieces of silver, and so shall you expiate your deed of violence

Sigurd The conditions you choose seem to me easy indeed. The three hundred pieces shall be paid, and to them I will add a brodered cloak of silk that was a gift to me from King Athelstan of England—such a cloak as no man in Iceland has ever worn

Dagny Well said, my brave husband, and my thanks, my father, to you, this is the first day I have known real happiness! (*She grasps her father's and brothers' hands and talks to them aside*)

Örnulf Now peace is fully established between us, and from to-day Dagny shall be in every way as honourably esteemed as if you and she had been wedded lawfully and with her kinsmen's consent

Sigurd And now can you depend upon me as upon one of your own blood

Örnulf Of that I am assured, and instantly mean to make trial of your goodwill.

Sigurd You shall find me ready. Say on—what do you require of me?

Örnulf Your help in word and deed. I have steered hither to Helgeland in search of Gunnar, to demand of him reparation for the carrying-away of Hjördis.

Sigurd (in surprise) Gunnar!

Dagny And Hjördis! Where are they to be found?

Örnulf At home in Gunnar's house, I imagine.

Sigurd And that is—?

Örnulf Not many bow-shots away. Did you not know that?

Sigurd (repressing a movement) Not I! It is seldom that I have sought news of Gunnar since last we sailed from Iceland together. A Viking's life has led me afar and I have served many kings in foreign lands, while Gunnar has sat at home. Before the stress of the storm I came under the lee of this land at daybreak to-day, and though it is true I knew that Gunnar dwelt here in the north in the home of his fathers, still——

Dagny (to ÖRNULF) So that was the errand on which you set forth from home?

Örnulf It was. (To SIGURD) Our meeting has been the work of the Mighty Ones above, they have willed it so. Had I been minded to seek you, I should have had but little knowledge where I should find you.

Sigurd (thoughtfully) Very true, very true!—But now about Gunnar—tell me, Örnulf, are you resolved to press him to the uttermost, with all your power, by fair means or foul?

Örnulf That I must do. Listen, Sigurd, to what I have to say. Last summer I rode to the meeting of the Thing, where many men of high honour sat with me in council. When that was over, I sat in the hall and drank with the men of my own Hundred, and it happened that our talk turned upon the carrying-off of women, and then was I reproached with scorn for having let my disgrace go so long unavenged. Thereupon my anger rose, and I swore to go to Norway and seek out Gunnar, and demand amends from him, or vengeance,

for his deed, and never to journey home again to Iceland till I had accomplished my purpose

Sigurd. Ah, well—if that is how it stands, it is clear that the matter must be hotly pursued in whatever way is needful.

Örnulf. It must, but I shall not be unreasonable, and Gunnar is reputed an honourable man. I am glad, too, to have set out upon this journey, time has hung very heavily upon my hands in Iceland of late. It was on the blue waters that I had grown old and grey, and I yearned to be out upon them once more before I— Ah, well!—Bergthora, my good wife, is long since dead, my eldest sons have left me every summer to go on Vikings' quests, and now, as Thorolf was growing up—

Dagny (happily) Is Thorolf with you? Where is he?

Örnulf On board my ship, out there (*Points to the background on the right*) A fine lad—you shall see. He has grown big and strong and comely since you were at home. He will make a splendid man, Sigurd; he will be like you some day

Dagny (with a smile) It is just as it always was, I see. Thorolf was ever the nearest to your heart

Örnulf He is the youngest, and like his mother, that is why it is

Sigurd But tell me, now—your errand with Gunnar—do you mean this very day—?

Örnulf Rather to-day than to-morrow. I shall be well content with a reasonable sum paid as penalty, but if Gunnar refuse such an offer of reconciliation, then must he take the consequences that will follow

(*KAARE enters hurriedly from the hillside. He is dressed in a coat of grey frieze and a felt hat, and carries a broken staff in his hand*)

Kaare Well met, warriors!

Örnulf Warriors are seldom good to meet.

Kaare If you are honourable men, let me find safety among you. Gunnar's men are after me and would kill me!

Örnulf Gunnar's men!

Sigurd Then you must have done him some harm!

8 The Warriors at Helgeland [ACT I

Kaare I did no more than I had a right. We had set our cattle to graze together on an island just off the shore. Gunnar's people drove off my best oxen, and one of his men abused me, calling me a thrall. For that I took my sword to him and slew him.

Örnulf That you had the right to do.

Kaare But now this morning his men came to make an attack on me. By good luck I was warned in time and got away, but I can look but for a short respite, for my enemies are seeking me.

Sigurd I can put but little faith in your story, fellow! In days gone by I knew Gunnar as well as I know myself, and this I know, that never would he attack a peaceable man.

Kaare Gunnar has no hand in the matter, he is away southwards. No, it is Hjördis, his wife—

Dagny Hjördis!

Örnulf (*muttering*) Yes, it would be just like her!

Kaare I offered to pay Gunnar a penalty for the killing of his thrall, and he was willing to accept it, but then came Hjördis and goaded her husband with scornful words, and prevented our peace-making, so Gunnar went away to the south, and this morning—

Sigurd (*looking out to the left*) Are those not men coming on the road northward?

Kaare It is Gunnar himself!

Örnulf Take comfort, I fancy I shall be able to make your peace with him.

(*GUNNAR, with some of his men, enters from the left. He is in home dress, brown tunic, woollen hose, a blue cloak and wide-brimmed hat, the only weapon he carries is a small axe*)

Gunnar (*stopping in wonder and uncertainty at the sight of the gathering*) Örnulf of the Fjords! Yes, in truth—!

Örnulf Yes, it is he.

Gunnar (*approaching*) Then welcome to my land!—if you are come in peace.

Örnulf If you be of the same mind as I, there shall be peace between us.

Sigurd (coming forward) Well met, Gunnar!

Gunnar Sigurd—foster-brother! (*Grasps his hand*) Nay, if you are with him, I know for certain that Örnulf is come in peace (*To ÖRNULF*) Give me your hand, old man! It is not difficult to guess what errand has brought you here in the north. It concerns Hjordis, your foster-daughter.

Örnulf It is as you say. It was a great wrong you did me when you sailed away with her from Iceland without asking my consent.

Gunnar You have right and custom on your side. A man must pay for his youth's wild deeds. I have expected you this many a day, Örnulf, for that deed of mine, and if paying a penalty can make peace between us, it shall soon be done.

Sigurd That is what I think. Örnulf will be reasonable.

Gunnar (with warmth) That must you be, old man, for if you were to esteem her at her true worth, all that I have could not pay the price.

Örnulf I shall go by law and custom, be assured of that. But now there is another matter. (*Points to KAARE*) Do you see this man?

Gunnar Kaare! (*To ÖRNULF*) Do you not know there is enmity between us?

Örnulf Your men have raided his cattle, and amends should be made for a raid.

Gunnar And for killing also. He has killed my thrall.

Kaare Because he insulted me.

Gunnar I told you I was ready to arrange an agreement with you.

Kaare. But Hjördis was in no mind for that, and this morning, while you were away, she fell upon me, and seeks me now to take my life.

Gunnar (in an irritated tone) Are you speaking the truth? Did she—?

Kaare Every word is true.

Örnulf And for that it was that this fellow craved my help, and he shall surely have it.

Gunnar (after a moment's thought) You have dealt honourably with me, Örnulf, it is only right, therefore, that I should conform to your will. Listen to me, Kaare. I am willing to let my thrall's death, and all the injury that you have suffered, acquit one another.

Kaare (holding out his hand to GUNNAR) That is fairly spoken, I agree to that.

Örnulf And he shall be at peace with you and yours?

Gunnar At peace in my house or wherever else he may choose to go.

Sigurd (pointing to the hillside) Look there!

Gunnar (displeased) It is Hjördis!

Örnulf With armed men!

Kaare She is seeking me!

(Enter HJÖRDIS with a train of followers. She is dressed in black kirtle, cloak and hat. Her followers are armed with swords and axes, she carries a light spear in her hand.)

Hjördis (stopping abruptly) We are mustering strong here, it seems!

Dagny (advancing towards her) Greeting to you, Hjördis!

Hjördis (coldly) Thank you. I heard that you were not far off. *(She advances, casting a keen glance on the men who are standing together.)* Gunnar—and Kaare, my enemy—Örnulf and his sons, and—*(as her glance falls on SIGURD she gives an almost imperceptible start, is silent for an instant, then recovers herself)* I see many faces that I know, but this I do not know—which of you is best disposed towards me?

Örnulf Indeed we are all well disposed towards you.

Hjördis If that is so, you will not refuse to hand Kaare over to my husband to deal with.

Örnulf There is no need.

Gunnar There is peace between us, and a reconciliation.

Hjördis (with stifled derision) A reconciliation? I see. I know you are a prudent man, Gunnar, Kaare has fallen in with a goodly number of friends, and I can easily understand that you thought it safest—

Gunnar Taunts are of no avail! (*Decisively*) Kaare is at peace with us.

Hjördís (*restraining herself*) So be it, if you have promised him peace, you must keep your promise

Gunnar (*firmly, but without heat*) I must and shall do that

Örnulf (*to* *HJÖRDÍS*) And another reconciliation was half accomplished, before you came

Hjördís (*sharply*). Between you and Gunnar?

Örnulf (*nodding his head*) It has to do with you.

Hjördís I know full well what it has to do with; but this I tell you, foster-father, never shall it be said that Gunnar allowed himself to be frightened because you came with armed men to his shores. Had you come alone, as a traveller seeking shelter in our house, the breach between us might have been easier healed

Gunnar Örnulf and his sons are come in peace

Hjördís Maybe, but the people will have a different tale to tell. And you yourself, Gunnar, had no such great trust in this peace yesterday, when you sent our son Egil to the south as soon as it was noised abroad that Örnulf's war-ship lay in the fjord.

Sigurd (*to* *GUNNAR*) Have you sent your son to the south?

Hjördís Yes, so that he should be safe if Örnulf fell upon us!

Örnulf It is no matter for jesting, Hjördís. What Gunnar has done may prove to have been the deed of a prudent man, if you prevent our reconciliation.

Hjördís. Fate rules our lives. What must be, will be, but for my part I would rather die than save my life by a cowardly reconciliation

Dagny Sigurd is making due amends, and none will deem him a man of less account for that

Hjördís Sigurd should know best what his honour can stand

Sigurd As to that I shall never need another's telling,

Hjördís. Sigurd is a renowned slayer of men, but Gunnar did a bolder deed when he slew the white bear at my door.

Gunnar (with an embarrassed glance at SIGURD) Yes, yes, but no more of that!

Örnulf In very truth that was the boldest deed that ever man did in Iceland, and therefore—

Sigurd So may Gunnar all the easier make a pact without being called a craven

Hjördis If he pay a penalty, he shall demand one too. Remember, Gunnar, the promise that once you gave!

Gunnar It was an ill thought of mine to make the promise. Do you mean to hold me to it?

Hjördis Indeed you shall hold to it, if we two are to live under the same roof after to-day. Listen to me, Örnulf, if amends are to be made for the carrying-off of your foster-daughter, you too shall make amends for having murdered my father Jökul and laid hands on all he possessed.

Örnulf Jökul fell in fair fight, in a duel between us. Your kinsmen did me a worse wrong by sending you to Iceland without telling me who you were, and causing me to adopt you.

Hjördis It was an honour, and no wrong done to you, to be foster-father to Jökul's daughter.

Örnulf It brought me nothing but trouble, that I know.

Hjördis Worse trouble may befall you now, if—

Örnulf I am not come here to wrangle with women!—Gunnar, for the last time, are you willing to make amends for her carrying-off?

Hjördis Remember what you promised!

Gunnar (to ÖRNULF) You have heard that I have given a promise and I must—

Örnulf (in an exasperated tone) Enough, enough! Never shall it be said of me that I made amends for killing in fair fight!

Hjördis (proudly) Then we defy you and yours!

Örnulf (with growing anger) And who is there here that has the right to demand amends for Jökul's death? Where are his kinsmen to be found? Not one of them is alive! Where is his lawful champion?

Hjördis That Gunnar is—on my behalf!

Örnulf Gunnar! Undoubtedly, if you had been wedded to him with your foster-father's consent, or if he had made amends for your carrying-off, he might have been your lawful champion, but—

Dagny (pleading anxiously) Father! Father!

Sigurd (quickly) Do not say it!

Örnulf (raising his voice) Yes, I shall cry it aloud!
A captured woman has no lawful husband!

Gunnar (vehemently) Örnulf!

Hjördis (in a wild outburst) Insulted! Shamed! (*In a trembling voice*) You—you shall come to repent this!

Örnulf (continuing). A captured woman may only lawfully be esteemed a man's mistress! If you wish a more honourable name, you must—

Hjördis (restraining herself) No, Örnulf, I know better what is seemly. If I am only to be esteemed Gunnar's mistress, well and good, then must he regain my honour for me by his deeds—by deeds so mighty that my position shall mean no shame to me! Have a care now, Örnulf! Here our ways part, but our swords shall be drawn against you and yours without respite, life and limb, you shall always be in danger, and so shall all who— (*turns angrily upon KAARE*) Ah, Kaare! Örnulf has taken your part, and there is peace between us, but I would counsel you not to go home yet awhile. The man you slew has many to avenge him, and it might easily happen that—well, I have warned you of the danger, now take the consequences. Come, Gunnar—to arms! You did a splendid deed in Iceland, but you must do greater deeds now, unless your—your mistress is to be ashamed of you and of herself!

Gunnar Curb yourself, Hjördis, these are unseemly words you speak!

Dagny (pleading with her) Foster-sister, stay—stay, I will bring my father to reason!

Hjördis (without listening to her) Let us home, let us home! Never was it foretold to me that I should spend my life as a wretched wanton, but if that is the life and

that the shame that I have to endure, even for a single day more, then must my husband do some deed that shall make him more renowned than all other men!
(Goes out to the right)

Gunnar (sadly) Sigurd, one thing you must promise me, we must speak together before you leave these shores. *(Goes out, with his followers, to the right. Meanwhile the storm has ceased. The midday sun is seen like a red disc far out on the horizon)*

Örnulf (threateningly) Dear shall this day cost you, foster-daughter!

Dagny Father! Father! Surely you cannot mean them harm!

Örnulf Let me be!—Now, Sigurd, there will be matter more serious than the mere paying of a penalty, betwixt Gunnar and me!

Sigurd What do you mean to do?

Örnulf I do not know, but it will be enough to set men talking, far and wide, of the visit of Örnulf of the Fjords to Gunnar.

Sigurd (quietly and firmly) Perhaps. But this I tell you, Örnulf, you shall never take up arms against him as long as I am alive.

Örnulf Not! But suppose I say I will?

Sigurd It shall not be—no matter how much you may will it.

Örnulf (impetuously) Very well. Even if you side with my foes, I shall not fear to face you all!

Sigurd Listen to me, Örnulf. Never shall you see the day when you and I meet as enemies. There is an honourable peace between us, Dagny is dearer to me than victories or gold, and never shall I forget that you are her nearest kinsman.

Örnulf That is no more than I expected of your noble heart, Sigurd.

Sigurd But Gunnar is my foster-brother. We have sworn peace and friendship. Both in battle and in times of peace we have taken life's chances together, and he is dearer to me than any other man. Brave as he is,

he has no lust for fighting And as for me, you all know me, and know that warfare has no terrors for me, but here I stand forth, Örnulf, and entreat you to be reconciled to Gunnar. Let me have my way in this!

Örnulf I cannot I shall be the laughing-stock of all my peers if I go empty handed back to Iceland!

Sigurd Empty handed you shall not go Here in the creek lie my two ships of war, with all the spoils I have won on my Viking quests There are many costly gifts from kings, coffers full of goodly weapons and other precious things Take one of the ships, choose whichever you prefer, it shall be yours with all that it contains, let that pay the penalty for Hjördis' carrying-off, and so let Gunnar go in peace

Örnulf Worthy Sigurd, would you do that for Gunnar!

Sigurd No man can do too much for a trusty friend.

Örnulf You would give half of all you have!

Sigurd (urgently) Take all I have, both my ships and all that is in them, and let me go with you to Iceland as the poorest man in your following What I give, I can win again, but if you take up arms against Gunnar, I shall never again be happy. Now, Örnulf, what is your answer?

Örnulf (thoughtfully). Two good ships of war, weapons and precious things—a man cannot have too much of such things, but—(*vehemently*)—no, no! Hjördis has threatened me! I will not! It would be a dishonourable thing if I took your gifts!

Sigurd But listen to me—

Örnulf No, I say! I must enforce my rights alone, and take my chance of the issue

Kaare (approaching) It is kindly advice that Sigurd gives, but if you are minded to enforce your rights to the best advantage, I can advise you better Count upon no satisfaction while Hjördis has any word in the matter, but revenge may be yours, if you will follow my counsel

Örnulf. Revenge? What counsel is this of yours?

Sigurd An evil counsel, I dare swear!

Dagny (to ÖRNULF) Do not listen to him!

Kaare Hjördis has made an outlaw of me, and with guile she will seek my life. Do you but promise to protect me afterwards, and this night I will go to Gunnar's house and burn it down over their heads. Is that to your mind?

Sigurd Miscreant!

Örnulf (quietly) To my mind? Shall I tell you, *Kaare*, what is far more to my mind? (*In tones of thunder*) To cleave the nose and ears off you, you miserable thrall! Little do you know of old Örnulf if you deem that he will have part in such a deed of infamy!

Kaare (recoiling) If you do not set upon Gunnar, he will set upon you!

Örnulf I have fists and weapons to hinder that.

Sigurd (to KAARE) And now, be off! It is a disgrace to an honourable man to hold converse with you.

Kaare (going) So be it. Then I must defend myself as best I can. But this I tell you—you will repent it, if you persist in gentle dealing. I know Hjördis—and I shall find a way to strike at her! (*Goes down to the shore*)

Dagny He is plotting some revenge. Sigurd, it must be prevented!

Örnulf (angrily) Oh, let him do what he likes. She deserves nothing better!

Dagny You do not mean that. Remember, you have been her foster-father.

Örnulf It was a baleful hour for me when I took her under my roof. Things begin to fall out as Jökul prophesied.

Sigurd Jökul?

Örnulf Jökul, her father. When I gave him his death-stroke, he fell back upon the sward, looked at me, and chanted

“Jökul's seed their father's slaying
Shall avenge in fullest measure,
Nor shall he find any gladness
Who hath taken Jökul's treasure!”

Then, when he had chanted this, he was silent for a while, then he laughed, and with that he died

Sigurd You should take little account of that

Örnulf Who knows? Who knows? Men tell it for a true tale that Jokul gave each of his children a wolf's heart to eat, to make them fierce Hjördis certainly had her share, one can see it in her (*Stops as he looks out to the right*) Gunnar!—Are we two to meet again?

Gunnar (*entering*) Yes, Örnulf, think what you will of me, but I cannot part from you as an enemy

Örnulf What do you want?

Gunnar To grasp your hand in friendship, before you go Listen to me, all of you Follow me to my house, and be my guests there as long as you have a mind to Sleep and good food shall not be lacking, and none shall speak of the dispute between us, either to-day or to-morrow

Sigurd But Hjördis?

Gunnar She is obedient to my will She is of a different mind since we went home, and thinks with me that we may yet be reconciled if you will be our guests

Dagny Yes, yes—if only that could be!

Sigurd (*irresolutely*) But indeed I do not know whether—

Dagny Gunnar is your foster-brother, surely you will not refuse—if I know anything of your nature

Gunnar (*to SIGURD*) You have been my friend in all our wanderings, you will not set yourself against me now!

Dagny And to sail away and leave hatred in Hjördis' heart—no, no, we could never do that!

Gunnar I have done Örnulf a great wrong, till that is righted my mind will know no peace

Sigurd (*vehemently*) I will do anything else for you, Gunnar, but I cannot remain here (*Recovers himself*) I am King Athelstan's vassal, and must be with him in England before the end of winter

Dagny But you can be that nevertheless!

Gunnar No man knows what the future has in store

for him; it may be, Sigurd, that this is the last time we shall meet, and, if that be so, you will regret that you did not grant my last request.

Dagny. And it will be long ere you see me happy again, if you sail away to-day

Sigurd (decisively) So be it, then! It shall be as you wish, although— However, I have decided There is my hand I will stay here and be your guest and Hjördis'

Gunnar (grasping his hand) Thanks, Sigurd, I knew well you would—And you, Örnulf, do you say the same as he?

Örnulf (sullenly) I will think on it Hjördis has offended me bitterly—I will give you no answer to-day

Gunnar Ah well, old warrior, Sigurd and Dagny will know how to smooth the wrath from your brow Now I go to prepare the feast, peace be with you, till we are well met in my halls! (*Goes out to the right*)

Sigurd (to himself) Hjördis has changed her mind, he said! He knows her but little, then, I should be more ready to believe that she is plotting— (*Breaks off and turns to his men*) Come, follow me all to the ships, I will choose goodly gifts to take to Gunnar and his folk

Dagny Gifts of the best we have And you, my father—I shall let you have no peace until you relent (*She goes with SIGURD and his men down to the seashore at the back*)

Örnulf Relent? Truly, if Gunnar had no women-folk in his house, I might— Ah! if only I knew how I could strike at her!—Thorolf, you here?

Thorolf (who has entered hurriedly) As you see! Is it true what they say, that you have met with Gunnar?

Örnulf Yes!

Thorolf And are now at strife with him?

Örnulf Well—at all events with Hjördis.

Thorolf Be of good cheer, then, you shall have your revenge

Örnulf Revenge? Who will avenge me?

Thorolf Listen. I was standing on shipboard, when

there came a man, with a staff in his hand, running and crying out "Listen, you who are on Örnulf's war-ship; greet him from Kaare and tell him that I am going to take vengeance for us both" Thereupon he got into a boat, and, as he rowed away, he said "Twenty outlawed men lie out upon the fjord, with them I am going southwards, and before nightfall Hjördis shall have no son to glory in"

Örnulf Did he say that! Aha, now I understand! Gunnar has sent his son away, Kaare is at enmity with him—

Thorolf And now he is rowing after the boy to kill him!

Örnulf (*with sudden decision*) Let us away! That is a prey we will fight for!

Thorolf What do you mean to do?

Örnulf Leave that to me. It shall be I, and not Kaare, that will take revenge!

Thorolf I will go with you!

Örnulf No, you will follow Sigurd and your sister to Gunnar's house

Thorolf Sigurd? Is he in these parts?

Örnulf You can see his war-ships there. We are reconciled, you will follow him

Thorolf To your enemies' house?

Örnulf Go only to the feast. Now Hjördis shall learn to know old Örnulf! But listen, Thorolf, say no word to anyone of what I have in my mind—do you hear, to no one!

Thorolf I promise that

Örnulf (*taking him by the hand and looking affectionately at him*) Farewell, then, my noble boy. Bear yourself modestly in the banqueting-hall, that you may do me honour. Avoid unnecessary talk, but let what you say be keen as a sword's edge. Be friendly to all that treat you well, but, if you be attacked, do not sit silent under it. Drink no more than you can carry, but do not put the drinking-horn away from you if it be offered in moderation, lest you be deemed womanish.

Thorolf. No, set your mind at ease!

Örnulf. Well, now, away to the feast in Gunnar's house. I am coming to the feast too, and that in a way that is least looked for (*Cheerfully, to the others*) Up, my wolf cubs! Sharpen your fangs!—you shall have blood to drink now! (*Goes out with his other sons by the background or the right* *SIGURD and DAGNY, dressed in handsome festal garments, come up from the shore, followed by two men carrying a coffer, the men go back again at once*)

Thorolf (*looking after his father*) Now are they all away to fight, and I must not go with them. It is hard to be the youngest.—Dagny! Greeting and hail to you, sister!

Dagny Thorolf! By heaven—how you are grown!

Thorolf. Well, in five years I suppose—

Dagny. Of course, of course.

Sigurd (*offering him his hand*) Örnulf will have a doughty helpmate in you, or I am much mistaken

Thorolf. If only he would try me—

Dagny (*with a smile*) But he takes more care of you than is to your liking. I know he is almost too fond of you

Sigurd Where is he gone?

Thorolf Down to the ship. Let us go now, he is coming later

Sigurd I am waiting for my men, they are bringing up some things and making fast the ships

Thorolf I will go and help them. (*Goes down to the shore*)

Sigurd (*after a moment's thought*) Dagny, my wife—now we are in private, I have something to tell you which may no longer be concealed

Dagny (*in astonishment*) What do you mean?

Sigurd This visit to Gunnar's house may prove perilous!

Dagny Perilous? Do you think Gunnar—?

Sigurd Gunnar is an honourable man. No, no—but it would have been better had I sailed away from here without being his guest

Dagny. You frighten me! Sigurd, what is it?

Sigurd Answer me one thing first The gold bracelet that once I gave you—where is it?

Dagny (showing it to him) Here on my arm, you bade me wear it

Sigurd Throw it into the depths of the sea, so deep that it can never be found!—because it may mean the doom of many men

Dagny The bracelet!

Sigurd (in a low voice) The night when you were carried off from your father's house—you remember?—

Dagny Do I remember!

Sigurd It is of that I wish to speak

Dagny (anxiously) What is it? Tell me!

Sigurd You know, there had been a feast, you went early to your chamber, but Hjördis still sat at table with the men, who were drinking The cup went freely round, and all sorts of brave oaths were sworn I swore to carry off a fair maid with me from Iceland, Gunnar swore the same, and offered Hjördis the drinking-cup. Taking it, she stood up and swore that no warrior should have her to wife save he who should go to her chamber, slay the white bear that stood chained at her door, and carry her off in his arms

Dagny Yes, yes, I know that

Sigurd But all thought it was an impossible task, for the bear was the fiercest of wild beasts None save Hjördis could come near it, and it had the strength of twenty men

Dagny But Gunnar slew it, and became famous far and wide for the deed

Sigurd (in low tones) He became famous—but—I did the deed!

Dagny (with a cry) You!

Sigurd When the men left the banquet-hall, Gunnar bade me withdraw to his bedchamber with him to talk with him in private Then said he “Hjördis is dearer to me than all other women, I cannot live without her” I answered him “Go to her chamber, then, you know

the terms she has set." But he said. "A man who is in love prizes his life dearly. The issue would be doubtful, if I attacked the bear, and I am fearful of losing my life now—for I should lose Hjördis with it." For long we talked together; and the end of it was that Gunnar got ready his ship, but I drew my sword, put on Gunnar's armour and went to Hjördis' chamber.

Dagny (with proud happiness) Then it was you—you who slew the bear!

Sigurd It was I. In her chamber it was dark and black as a raven's wing. Hjördis thought it was Gunnar that was at her side—her head was heavy with wine. She drew a bracelet off her arm, and gave it to me—it is that you wear now.

Dagny (hesitatingly) And you were all the night through in Hjördis' chamber?

Sigurd My sword lay drawn between us. (*Short silence*) Before the day dawned, I bore Hjördis to Gunnar's ship, she never perceived our trick, and he sailed away with her. Then I went to your chamber and found you there among your women. What followed afterwards, you know. I sailed away from Iceland with a fair maid, as I had sworn, and faithfully since then have you followed me wherever I have steered my course.

Dagny (excitedly) My brave husband! You did the mighty deed—oh, I might have known it! None but you were strong enough! You might have won Hjördis, that proud and splendid woman, and yet you chose me! Ten times dearer would you be now, were you not already the dearest thing in the world to me!

Sigurd Dagny, my dear wife, now you know—all that there is need you should know. I had to warn you, because of the bracelet—Never let Hjördis set eyes upon it. If you will do as I desire, you will cast it away—into the depths of the sea!

Dagny No, Sigurd, it is too dear to me for that, it is a gift from you! But be at ease, I shall hide it from every eye, and never shall I betray what you have told me.

(*THOROLF comes up from the ships with SIGURD's men*)

Thorolf. All is ready, let us go to the feast!

Dagny. Come, Sigurd—my brave and noble warrior!

Sigurd. Softly, Dagny—softly! It depends on you now, whether our journey shall end in peace or slaughter! (*Quickly, to the others*) Now away, all, to the feast in Gunnar's halls! (*Goes out with DAGNY to the right, the others follow him*)

ACT II

(*SCENE—The Banqueting-hall in GUNNAR's house. The main entrance is at the back, there are smaller doors in the side walls. In the foreground on the left, the chief seat of honour, opposite to it, on the right, the lesser seat of honour. A fire of logs is burning on a stone hearth in the middle of the floor. In the background, on both sides of the door, are platforms for the serving-women. From the seats of honour two long tables, with benches, stretch along the walls to the background. It is dark without, the log fire lights up the hall. HJÖRDIS and DAGNY enter from the right*)

Dagny. No, Hjördis, I do not understand you. You have shown me your home, I can see nothing lacking there, and everything that you have is fine and handsome. How can you complain as you do?

Hjördis. Ah!—set an eagle in a cage and it will bite at the bars, whether they be iron or gold.

Dagny. At any rate in one thing you are richer than I; you have Egil, your little son.

Hjördis. Better far to have no child than one born in dishonour.

Dagny. In dishonour?

Hjördis. Have you forgotten your father's words? Egil is a bastard—that is what he said.

Dagny. A word spoken in anger—why do you pay heed to that?

Hjördís Oh, Örnulf was right Egil is a poor creature, he has not the look of a free-born lad,

Dagny Hjördís, how can you—!

Hjördís (without paying attention to her) Doubtless infamy of that sort may be absorbed into the blood, like the venom from a snake-bite The free-born sons of heroes are of different stuff I have heard of a queen who took her little son and sewed his tunic fast to his flesh, and he never so much as stirred an eyelid (*With a malignant expression*) Dagny, I should like to try that with Egil!

Dagny (in disgust) Hjördís! Hjördís!

Hjördís (with a laugh) Ha, ha, ha! Did you think I was in earnest? (*Changing her tone*) But, believe me or not as you will, there sometimes comes over me an overwhelming desire to do things like that I daresay it is born in me, for I am descended from a race of giants, they say—Come, sit down, Dagny You have journeyed far and wide in these five long years Tell me, have you often been a guest in kings' houses?

Dagny Yes—especially at the court of Athelstan in England

Hjördís And were received with the highest honour everywhere—and everywhere sat in the highest seats at table?

Dagny Of course As Sigurd's wife—

Hjördís Yes, quite so Sigurd is a man of great renown, though Gunnar outranks him

Dagny Gunnar?

Hjördís Gunnar did a deed which Sigurd dared not attempt—but let that pass Tell me, when Sigurd has been on a Viking's quest and you have been with him—when you heard the blades whistling in keen sword-play, when the decks of the ship reeked red with blood—were you never filled with a wild desire to join with the men in the fight?—did you never put on armour and take a sword in your hand?

Dagny Never! What are you thinking of? I, a woman?

Hjördis A woman, a woman—I tell you, no one knows of what a woman is capable!—At all events there is one thing you can tell me, Dagny, because in truth you must know it well. When a man embraces a woman, loves her—is it true that then her blood is on fire, her breast throbs—that she swoons with a strange joy?

Dagny (blushing) Hjördis, how can you—!

Hjördis Well, but tell me!

Dagny. I think there can be little doubt you have known it yourself

Hjördis Yes, once—once only. It was that night Gunnar sat beside me in my chamber, he crushed me in his embrace till his coat of mail burst apart, and then, then—!

Dagny (with a cry) What! Sigurd—?

Hjördis Sigurd? Who spoke of Sigurd? I said Gunnar—the night he carried me off—

Dagny (recovering herself) Yes, yes, I remember—of course I know—

Hjördis That was the only time. Never again—never! I thought I had been bewitched, because for Gunnar to embrace a woman in such a fashion—(*stops, and looks at DAGNY*) Are you ill? Your colour comes and goes

Dagny It is nothing, it is nothing!

Hjördis (without heeding her) No, I ought to have gone out to taste the joy of battle! It would have been better for me—better, maybe, for us all. It would have been a full and glorious life! Are you not amazed, Dagny, to find me still alive here? Would you not be afraid to be alone with me here in my chamber, when all is dark? Would you not imagine that I had died long since, and that it was the ghost of me that was here with you?

Dagny (uneasily) Come—let us go—and join the others!

Hjördis (taking her by the arm) No, stay! Can you understand, Dagny, how anyone can be alive after sitting here for five nights?

Dagny Five nights?

Hjördis Here in the north it is night all the winter long (*Quickly, and in an altered tone*) But you must not think it is not splendid enough here sometimes You shall see sights here such as you have never seen in the halls of England's king We shall be as sisters together while you are my guest We will go down to the sea when the storms begin to rage, you shall see the billows breaking on the shore like wild white-maned horses—and the whales far out at sea! They rush on one another like foemen clad in steel! What joy to sit like a witch on a whale's back and ride before the ships, rousing the storm and luring men into the depths with spells of witchcraft!

Dagny For shame, *Hjördis*, how can you speak so!

Hjördis Do you know any witches' spells, *Dagny*?

Dagny (*with horror*), I!

Hjördis, I had thought you did; how did you entice *Sigurd*?

Dagny, What you say is shameful—let me go!

Hjördis (*holding her back*) I was but jesting! Nay, but listen! Think of it, *Dagny*—to sit at night here by the door, and listen to the kelpies wailing by the boats; to sit and wait, listening for the dead men to pass on their last journey homewards, for their path must lie past these northern shores—heroes who have fallen in battle, noble women who have not spent their life tamely as you and I have. In the storm and tempest they hurtle through the air on black horses, to the sound of bells! (*Throws her arms round her and clasps her wildly to her*) Ah, think of it, *Dagny*! To ride one's last ride on so goodly a steed!

Dagny (*shaking herself free of her*) *Hjördis*, *Hjördis*! Let me go! I will not listen to you!

Hjördis (*laughing*) You are a poor thing, and easy to scare!

(*GUNNAR enters from the back, with SIGURD and THOROLF*)

Gunnar Yes, in truth, I could wish for nothing better than this I have found you again, *Sigurd*, my brave and

ACT II] The Warriors at Helgeland

27

noble brother, faithful and true as ever, I have a son of Ærnulf's under my roof, and Ærnulf himself will be here ere long—is it not so?

Thorolf. He promised to come.

Gunnar. The only thing I lack is to have my little Egil at home.

Thorolf. You must love the boy dearly, you speak of him so often.

Gunnar. That I do. He is the only one, and has the makings of a well-favoured and warm-hearted man.

Hjördis. But not of a hero.

Gunnar. Come, come—you have no right to say that.

Sigurd. And yet you sent him away—

Gunnar. I would I had not done so! (*In a lower voice*) But you, Sigurd, know that a man is apt to play the woman sometimes when there is one thing dearer to him than all else in the world (*Raising his voice again*) I had but few men about the house, and there was not one of us but felt that his life was in danger, when we heard that Ærnulf lay off the shore with his ships of war.

Hjördis. I know one thing that a man should think of first, before his life.

Thorolf. And that is?

Hjördis. His honour and repute.

Gunnar. Hjördis!

Sigurd. No one will ever say of Gunnar that he has forfeited his honour by what he has done.

Gunnar (severely). It is a bootless task to try and embroil me with Ærnulf's friends!

Hjördis (with a smile). Hm!—tell me, Sigurd, can your ship sail before any wind?

Sigurd. Yes, if it be shrewdly steered.

Hjördis. Good!—I shall steer my ship shrewdly, too, and shall know how to reach the port I am making for.

(*Goes further into the room*)

Dagny (in a low uneasy voice). Sigurd, let us go away from here—this very night!

Sigurd. It is too late now, it was yourself that—

Dagny I felt fond of Hjördís then, but now—I have heard her say what I am afraid to think of. (*SIGURD's followers and other guests, men and women, serving-men and maids, come in at the back of the hall. Salutations are exchanged among the guests.*)

Gunnar Now, to table! My most honoured guest, Órnulf of the Fjords, comes later, that Thorolf promises me

Hjördís (to the serving-folk) Pass round ale and mead, that tongues may be loosened and hearts made merry

(*GUNNAR leads SIGURD to the seat of honour on the right. DAGNY sits on SIGURD's right, HJÖRDÍS opposite to him at the same table. THOROLF is given a similar place at the other table, and sits facing GUNNAR, who takes his seat in the chief seat of honour. The others take their places further back. There is a short pause, while the guests drink and talk together.*)

Hjördís It is not often that so many brave men sit together as are gathered in this hall to-night, it would seem a suitable occasion to practise an old pastime. Let each man tell of his exploits, and all here shall judge who is the best man among us

Gunnar That is an ill custom when the drinking-horn is passing round, often it breeds quarrels.

Hjördís. I did not think that Gunnar was afraid,

Sigurd That no one can think, but so many are we here that it would be late ere we had finished, were we to tell our exploits. Rather do you tell us, Gunnar, of your journey to Bjarmeland, it was a goodly exploit to journey so far northwards, and we would gladly hear of it from you

Hjördís. The journey to Bjarmeland was nought but a journey, and scarcely worth mention among heroes. No, do you begin, Sigurd!—unless you would have me think that you can ill bear to hear my husband praised. So begin! Tell us which you esteem the finest of the deeds you have done

Sigurd Well, since you force me, so be it. It may be worth the telling, that once on a Viking quest, as I lay

off the Orkneys, enemies attacked us, but we cleared their ships and I fought alone against eight men,

Hjördis It was a goodly exploit, but were you fully armed?

Sigurd Fully armed, with axe, spear and shield,

Hjördis It was a goodly exploit, nevertheless. Now husband, must you say what you deem the bravest deed you have ever done?

Gunnar (reluctantly) I slew two berserkers that had seized a merchant vessel, and thereupon sent the captured seamen home and gave them their ship freely and without ransom. The king of England thought well of the exploit and said I had done what was worthy of honour, and gave me thanks and goodly gifts.

Hjördis Truly, Gunnar, you could tell us of a nobler exploit than that.

Gunnar (vehemently) I will boast of no other exploit! Since last I journeyed from Iceland, I have lived at peace and been nought but a traveller. So there is no more to tell!

Hjördis If you conceal what is your glory, then must your wife speak.

Gunnar *Hjördis*, be silent—I command you!

Hjördis Sigurd fought with eight men when he was fully armed, but Gunnar came to my chamber in the dead of night and slew the bear that had the strength of twenty men, and he had nought but a short sword in his hand.

Gunnar (deeply agitated) Woman, not another word!

Dagny (in a low voice) Sigurd, will you endure this—?

Sigurd (to her). Be still!

Hjördis (to the guests) And now, good friends—which is the braver man, Sigurd or Gunnar?

Gunnar Silence!

Hjördis (raising her voice) Speak on, I have the right to ask!

An Old Man (among the guests) If truth be told, Gunnar's deed stands above all other deeds men have done; Gunnar is the bravest hero, and Sigurd the next to him.

Gunnar (glancing across the table) Oh, Sigurd, Sigurd, if only you knew—'

Dagny (in a low voice) It is too much—even for a friend!

Sigurd Silence, wife! (*Aloud, to the others*) Yes, indeed is Gunnar the most worthy of honour among all men, and that would I deem him till my last breath, even had he never done that brave deed—for that I esteem less highly than you

Hjōrdis There speaks envy in you, Sigurd!

Sigurd (smiling) There you are much mistaken! (*In a friendly tone, to GUNNAR, while he pledges him across the table*) Your health, noble Gunnar, our friendship shall stand fast, whoever may attempt to sever it.

Hjōrdis That no one is attempting, so far as I know

Sigurd Do not say that. I am almost tempted to believe that you invited us to this feast in order to stir up strife

Hjōrdis That is like you, Sigurd, you are wroth now, because you cannot be looked upon as the best man here!

Sigurd I have always thought more of Gunnar than of myself

Hjōrdis Well, well—to be second to Gunnar is an honour, too, and—(*with a sidelong glance at THOROLF*)—if Örnulf had been here he might have had the third place

Thorolf Then if Jökul, your father, were here, he would have to take a lowly seat—for he had to bow low before Örnulf, as we know

(*The subsequent dialogue is carried on with a growing, if restrained, excitement*)

Hjōrdis You have no right to say that! We know that Örnulf is a bard, and there are those who whisper that he has taken credit for greater deeds than he has done

Thorolf Then let those that whisper such things have a care that it does not reach my ears!

Hjōrdis (with a provoking smile) Would you avenge it?

Thorolf Yes, and in such a way that men should know it far and wide!

Hjördis. Then I drink to you, with the wish that you may first grow a beard on your smooth chin

Thorolf Even a beardless boy is too good to bandy words with women

Hjördis But too weak to fight with men! That was why your father let you sit still by the fireside at home, while your brothers went forth to fight

Thorolf It was ill done of him that he did not keep as watchful an eye on you, for then you would not have left his shores as a captured woman!

Gunnar and Sigurd Thorolf!

Dagny (at the same time) Brother!

Hjördis (in a low voice, trembling with rage) Ah—wait! Only wait!

Thorolf (holding out his hand to GUNNAR) Do not be angry with me, Gunnar; they were evil words that my tongue let slip—but your wife provoked me to it!

Dagny (in a low, entreating voice) Foster-sister, if ever you had any love for me, do not stir up strife!

Hjördis (with a laugh) One must jest at a feast, if there is to be any merriment

Gunnar (who has been talking aside to THOROLF) You are a brave lad (*Takes down a sword that is hanging above his seat, and gives it to him*) There, Thorolf—there is a good gift for you Use it well, and let us be friends

Thorolf (examining the sword) Thanks for the gift, Gunnar, it shall never be used in a dishonourable fight

Hjördis If you mean to keep that promise, never lend the sword to your brothers—

Gunnar Hjördis!

Hjördis (continuing). Nor hang it on your father's walls either, for there it would hang beside the weapons of a dishonoured man

Thorolf True enough, Hjördis—your father's axe and shield have hung there these many years

Hjördis (restraining herself) You are for ever boasting of Örnulf's having defeated my father, but, if rumour

speaks truly, that exploit was not so honourable as you think

Thorolf What rumour?

Hjördis (with a smile) I dare not tell you, it would make you angry

Thorolf Then be silent, that is what I should prefer
(*Turns away from her*)

Hjördis Oh, I may as well tell you Is it true, Thorolf, that your father, before he dared go out to meet Jökul in the duel, put on a woman's clothes and sat for three nights brewing spells with the witch of Smalserhorn?

(*All rise, consternation spreads among the guests*)

Gunnar, Sigurd and Dagny Hjördis!

Thorolf (provoked beyond endurance) So foul a lie have you never heard spoken of Örnulf of the Fjords! You have invented it yourself, only a mind so poisoned as yours could invent such infamy! You have accused my father of the basest thing a man could do! (*Throws the sword away from him*) There, Gunnar, take back your gift! I take no gifts from a house where my father is insulted!

Gunnar Thorolf, only listen to me!

Thorolf Let me go! But have a care, both you and Hjördis, for my father has in his power at this moment one that is dearest of all to you both!

Hjördis (with a start) Your father has—!

Gunnar (with a cry) What are you saying!

Sigurd (quickly) Where is Örnulf?

Thorolf (with a scornful laugh) Gone to the south—with my brothers!

Gunnar Gone to the south!

Hjördis (impetuously) Gunnar! Örnulf has slain Egil, our son!

Gunnar Slain!—Egil slain! Then woe betide Örnulf and all his house! Thorolf, tell me—is this true?

Sigurd Gunnar, Gunnar, listen to me!

Gunnar Tell me, if you value your life!

Thorolf You cannot frighten me! Wait till my

father comes He will brand Gunnar's house with shame But you, Hjördis—do you, meantime, make the most of the words I heard to-day “Before night-fall, Gunnar and his wife shall have no child to glory in!” (*Goes out at the back*)

Gunnar (*in deepest grief*) Slain—slain! My little Egil slain!

Hjördis (*wildly*) And you—you have let him go! Are you going to let Egil, your own son, be unavenged! You will be the mock of every man if you—

Gunnar (*as if beside himself*) A sword—an axe! He has spoken his last word! (*Snatches an axe from one of the bystanders and rushes out*)

Sigurd (*trying to follow him*) Gunnar, hold your hand!

Hjördis (*holding him back*) Let him be! Let him be! They will separate them I know Gunnar!

(*A cry is heard from among the crowd which has gathered round the door*)

Sigurd and Dagny What is that?

A Voice from the Crowd Thorolf is killed!

Sigurd Thorolf! Ah, let me go!

Dagny My brother! Oh, my brother!

(*As SIGURD turns to rush out, the crowd parts and*

GUNNAR comes in, throwing his axe away from him at the door)

Gunnar It is done Egil is avenged!

Sigurd Aye, if only your hand has not struck too soon

Gunnar Maybe, maybe, but Egil, Egil, my beautiful boy!

Hjördis We must arm ourselves now, and claim our friends' help, for there will be many that will seek to avenge Thorolf

Gunnar (*darkly*) He himself will be his grimmest avenger, he will be in my thoughts night and day

Hjördis Thorolf got what he deserved One of a family must suffer for the misdeeds of another

Gunnar True, but this I know, that I was happier in my mind before I slew him

Hjördis The first night after a killing is always the

34 The Warriors at Helgeland [ACT II

worst, when that is past, all goes well again. Örnulf has accomplished his revenge with shameful cunning, he would not come against us in open fight, but made as though his mind were set on reconciliation, that he might fall thus upon our defenceless child! I saw more clearly than you all; I knew Örnulf to be evil-minded and crafty, and good cause had I to stir you to enmity with him and his false brood!

Gunnar (excitedly) That had you! My vengeance is but a little thing compared with Örnulf's crime. He has lost Thorolf, but he has still six sons left to him, and I not one—not one!

A Serving-Man (rushing up from the back of the hall)
Örnulf of the Fjords is here!

Gunnar Örnulf!

Hjördis and some of the Men To arms! To arms!

Dagny My father!

Sigurd (as if seized with misgiving) Örnulf—! Ah, Gunnar, Gunnar!

Gunnar (drawing his sword) Up, all of you! Vengeance for Egil's death!

(ÖRNULF strides in with EGIL in his arms)

Gunnar (with a shriek) Egil!

Örnulf Here is your little Egil come back to you!

All (in amazement) Egil! Egil alive!

Gunnar (letting his sword fall out of his hand) Woe is me—what have I done?

Dagny Oh, Thorolf, my brother!

Sigurd I was sure of it!

Örnulf (setting EGIL down) There, Gunnar, there is your splendid boy for you!

Egil Father! Old Örnulf was not going to do me any harm, as you said he would when I went away!

Örnulf (to HJÖRDIS) Now I have atoned for your father's death, now I think we may be reconciled.

Hjördis (restraining herself) That may be!

Gunnar (as if waking from a dream) Is it a horrible dream that is bewildering me! You—you have brought Egil home!

Örnulf As you see, but this let me tell you, that he has been very near death

Gunnar I know it

Örnulf And yet you show no more happiness than this over his return?

Gunnar Had he but come sooner, I would have shown more happiness But tell me everything—all that has happened!

Örnulf It is soon told Kaare, the peasant, had an evil design against you, together with some other wretches he went southwards after Egil

Gunnar Kaare! (*In a low voice*) Ah, now I understand what Thorolf said!

Örnulf His plot came to my ears, and such a crime was not to be permitted I would have refused all atonement for Jokul's death, and willingly, Gunnar, would I have slain you in a duel if fate had so decreed—but I could not but defend your child. So with my sons I went after Kaare

Sigurd (*to himself*) A terrible deed has been done here!

Örnulf When I came up with them, Egil's attendants had been captured, your son was at the mercy of his enemies, and they would not long have spared him. Fierce became the fighting then! Keener blows has my sword seldom dealt! Kaare and two of his men escaped inland, the rest are sleeping soundly and will be hard to wake

Gunnar (*in the greatest anxiety*) But you—you, Örnulf?

Örnulf (*grimly*) Six sons of mine followed me into the strife

Gunnar (*breathlessly*) And there came back—?

Örnulf Not one

Gunnar (*in terror*) Not one! (*Softly*) And Thorolf, Thorolf!

(*Profound sensation among the crowd HJÖRDIS appears to be fighting a hard fight with herself DAGNY is weeping quietly SIGURD, deeply moved, stands beside her*)

Örnulf (*after a short pause*) It is hard to stand like

a green and vigorous tree, and then to be stripped of all one's branches by a single storm. Nevertheless, one man must die and another live. Give me a cup, I will drink to the memory of my sons. (*One of SIGURD's men brings him a drinking-horn*) Hail to you on your last ride, my noble sons! The copper gates shall not be shut upon your heels, because ye are come to the halls of Walhalla with a goodly following! (*Drinks, and gives back the horn*) And now, home to Iceland, Örnulf's fighting days are over. The old tree has but one green branch left, and that he must protect. Where is Thorolf?

Egil (to his father) Yes, show me Thorolf! Örnulf told me he would carve me a wooden ship with lots and lots of warriors.

Örnulf I should thank the good gods that Thorolf was not with me, because if he too—no, strong as I am, that would have been too hard for me to bear. But why does he not come? He has always been the first to greet his father, for it seemed to both of us as if we could not live a day without the other.

Gunnar Örnulf, Örnulf!

Örnulf (with growing uneasiness) You all stand silent, as I now see—What has happened? Where is Thorolf?

Dagny Sigurd, Sigurd—this will be the cruellest blow to him!

Gunnar (fighting with himself) Old man!—no—no—and yet it cannot be concealed—

Örnulf (vehemently) My son! Where is he?

Gunnar Thorolf is slain!

Örnulf Slain! Thorolf? Thorolf? You are lying!

Gunnar I would give the last drop of my blood to see him alive again!

Hjördis (to ÖRNULF) Thorolf had but himself to blame for what came to pass. He told us a dark saying, that you had fallen upon Egil and killed him. It was half in enmity that you and we parted last, and you have already dealt death among my race—and, besides, Thorolf behaved like a pert boy, at the feast, he took

every jest amiss, and spoke many an ill word, It was only then that Gunnar was moved to anger—only then that he raised his hand against your son I should say indeed that he had good cause for what he did

Örnulf (*calmly*) It is easily seen you are a woman, you use many words What is the use? If Thorolf is slain, then the book of his life is closed

Egil If Thorolf is slain, I shall not get my warriors

Örnulf No, Egil—we have both lost our warriors, you and I (*To HJÖRDIS*) Your father sang

“Jokul’s seed their father’s slaying
Shall avenge in fullest measure”

You have taken good care that his words should come true (*After a moment’s silence, he turns to the men*) Where did he receive his death-blow?

A Man Over the brow

Örnulf (*happily*) Ah!—that is an honourable place, he did not turn his back on his foe But did he fall to the side, or in towards Gunnar’s feet?

A Man Half to the side and half towards Gunnar

Örnulf That bodes only half a vengeance Ah, well—we shall see!

Gunnar (*drawing near*) Örnulf, well do I know that all my possessions could not make up for your loss, but demand what you will of me—

Örnulf (*coldly, interrupting him*) Give me Thorolf’s body, and let me go! Where is he lying? (GUNNAR points silently to the back. ÖRNULF takes a few steps, then turns and says in tones of thunder to SIGURD, DAGNY and others who are following him compassionately) Back! Do you think Örnulf needs to be followed by a train of mourners, like a whining woman! Back, I say!—I can tend Thorolf alone (*With quiet dignity*) Childless I go, but none shall say he saw me bowed in grief! (*Goes out slowly*)

Hjördis (*with a bitter laugh*) Let him go as he likes There will be no need for us to be many here, if he should come again as a foe! Well, Dagny—I should think this

38 The Warriors at Helgeland [ACT II

were the last time your father would sail from Iceland on such an errand!

Sigurd (indignantly) For shame!

Dagny (in the same tone) Have you the heart to mock at him!—to mock at him, after what has passed!

Hjördis, When a deed is done, it is wise to make the best of it. I swore hatred and vengeance on Örnulf this morning. Jökul's death I might have forgotten, and all else—but not his insults to myself. Gunnar's mistress, he called me, if that be so, I count it no shame, because Gunnar is a mightier man than your father now. He is nobler and more renowned than Sigurd, your husband!

Dagny (deeply stirred) There you are wrong, Hjördis—and this moment all shall know that you live under a coward's roof!

Sigurd (hastily) Dagny, what are you going to do!

Gunnar A coward!

Hjördis (with a mocking laugh) You talk like one out of her wits!

Dagny It shall be concealed no longer. I was silent until you mocked at my father and my dead brothers; I was silent while Örnulf was here, so that he should not hear that Thorolf had fallen by the hand of a dastard. But now—never again praise Gunnar for his brave deed in Iceland, for Gunnar is a coward! The sword that lay drawn between you and the man that captured you, hangs at my husband's side—and the bracelet that you drew off your arm, you gave to Sigurd—(*draws it off her arm and holds it high in the air*) and here it is!

Hjördis (wildly) Sigurd!

The Crowd Sigurd! It was Sigurd that did it!

Hjördis (trembling with emotion) He—he! Gunnar, is it true?

Gunnar (with quiet dignity) It is all true—except that I am a coward. I am neither coward nor dastard.

Sigurd (moved) That you are not, Gunnar! That you have never been! (*To the others*) Away, my men! Let us away from here!

Dagny (from the doorway, to HJÖRDIS) Who is the best man among us now, my husband or yours!

(She goes out with SIGURD and his followers)

Hjördis (alone) Now I have but one thing left to do—but one thing to think of. Either Sigurd or I must die!

ACT III

(SCENE—The hall in GUNNAR'S house It is day HJÖRDIS is sitting on a seat in front of the lesser seat of honour, busy twisting a bowstring A bow and some arrows are lying on the table)

Hjördis (stretching the string) It is tough and strong *(Glances at the arrows)* The arrows are sharp and well-weighted *(Lets her hands fall into her lap)* But where is the hand that will—! *(Impetuously)* To be made a mock of—by him—by Sigurd! It is he that deserves my hate more than anyone—that is certain—and the day is not far off when I shall—. *(Brooding)* Yes, but where—where is the hand that will do the deed?

(GUNNAR enters from the back, silent and deep in thought)

Hjördis (after a short pause) How goes it with you, husband?

Gunnar Ill, Hjördis, I cannot rid myself of the burden of yesterday's deed. It lies heavy on me

Hjördis Do as I do, get yourself some work to do

Gunnar Yes, I must *(A pause GUNNAR walks up and down, then looks attentively at what she is doing and draws near)* What are you doing there?

Hjördis (without looking up) Making a bowstring, as you can see

Gunnar A bowstring—of your own hair!

Hjördis (with a smile) Great things happen every hour nowadays, you killed my foster-brother, and I have been twisting this since daybreak,

Gunnar Hjördis, Hjördis!

Hjördis (*looking up*) What is it?

Gunnar. Where were you last night?

Hjördis Last night?

Gunnar You were not in your chamber.

Hjördis Do you know that?

Gunnar. I could not sleep; I dreamed restlessly of— of what happened to Thorolf. I thought I saw him before me— Well, at last I woke, and heard the sound of strange and beautiful singing through the house. I got up, peeped in through this door, and here you sat by the fire, which was burning blue and red, sharpening your arrows and crooning witches' spells over them.

Hjördis There was good need; for it is a stubborn heart that must be pierced to-day.

Gunnar. I understand you well enough. You would have Sigurd dead.

Hjördis Hm! Perhaps.

Gunnar. You shall never have your will, then. I am Sigurd's friend, however bitterly you may incite me against him.

Hjördis (*smiling*) Do you mean that?

Gunnar. Certainly.

Hjördis (*holding out the bowstring to him*). Tell me, Gunnar—can you undo that knot?

Gunnar (*trying*) No, it is tied too well and cleverly.

Hjördis (*getting up*) The mesh that the Norns weave is knotted even tighter than that, it will not be in your power to undo it.

Gunnar The ways of the Mighty Ones are strange, neither you nor I know aught of them.

Hjördis. One thing I know well. Sigurd will bring misfortune to us both.

(*A pause. GUNNAR stands buried in thought. HJÖRDIS watches him silently.*)

Hjördis What are you thinking of?

Gunnar Oh, a dream I had lately. I dreamt I had done the deed you are set upon, Sigurd lay dead upon the ground, and you were standing by him, as pale as

death. Then I said "Are you glad now, when what you wished is done?" But you laughed and answered: "I should be gladder if you, Gunnar, lay there in Sigurd's stead"

Hjördis (with a constrained laugh) Little do you know me, if so senseless a dream can stay your hand!

Gunnar Ah!—Tell me, *Hjördis*, are you happy here?

Hjördis If I must tell you truth, *Gunnar*, there are times when I feel cramped in these halls

Gunnar. Just as I thought. We are one too many here

Hjördis Perhaps two

Gunnar (not hearing her last remark) But that shall be remedied

Hjördis (looking at him questioningly) Remedied? Do you mean—?

Gunnar I mean to arm my ships of war and sail away from here. I mean to win back the honour that I lost because you were dearer than all else to me

Hjördis (pensively) You are going away? Yes—maybe that will be best for us both

Gunnar Ever since the day we sailed away from Iceland, I have known that we should not be happy together. You are proud and resolute; there are times when I am almost afraid of you—and yet, strangely enough, it is most of all on that account that I love you so dearly. You seem to cast a terrible spell upon me; I feel as if you could tempt me to any crime, and that I should think anything good that you bade me do. (*Shaking his head slowly*) Inscrutable are the ways of the Norns!—Sigurd should have been your husband.

Hjördis (with a cry) Sigurd!

Gunnar Yes, Sigurd. If you were not blinded by hate and vengeance, you would see his worth better. If I had been like Sigurd, I might have made your life happy for you

Hjördis (with deep, but restrained emotion) And do you mean that—that Sigurd could have done that?

Gunnar He is a man of resolute mind, and wellnigh as proud as you

Hjördis (impetuously) If that is so— (*Restrains herself*) No matter, no matter! (*With a wild outburst*)

Gunnar—kill Sigurd!

Gunnar Never!

Hjördis By cunning and deceit you got me for your wife—that shall be all forgotten! Five joyless years have I spent here—that shall be all forgotten, on the day when Sigurd shall cease to live!

Gunnar No harm shall come to him at my hands. (*Starting back involuntarily*) *Hjördis*, *Hjördis*, you shall not tempt me!

Hjördis Then must I find another avenger, Sigurd shall no longer be able to heap insults on me and on you! (*Clenching her fists convulsively in her passion*) Perhaps he is sitting alone with her now—with that fool of a woman—dallying with her and laughing at us, telling over again the tale of the disgrace he wrought me when he carried me off in your stead, telling her how craftily he laughed when he stood in my chamber in the dark and I did not know it was he!

Gunnar That he would never do—never!

Hjördis (violently) Sigurd and Dagny must die! I can never breathe freely till they two are dead! (*Comes closer to him, with glittering eyes, and speaks in a passionate whisper*) If you could help me to that, *Gunnar*—then I would live lovingly with you, I would clasp you in my arms with such passionate caresses as you have never dreamt of!

Gunnar (vacillating) *Hjördis*! Would you—!

Hjördis Set your hand to the work, *Gunnar*—and there shall be no more unhappy days for you, no longer will I go out of the room when you come in—never speak an unkind word, or quench your smile when you are happy, I will deck myself in furs and costly silken dresses, if you go fighting, I will follow you—if you ride out on peaceful journeys, I will ride beside you, at the feast I will sit at your side, and fill your drinking-

horn and drink to you, and sing goodly songs to you to make your heart glad!

Gunnar (almost won over) Is it true? Would you—!

Hjördis I would do more than that—ten times more—I swear it! Only avenge me! Avenge me upon Sigurd and Dagny, and then I will—*(breaks off, as she sees the door opened)* Dagny—you!

Dagny (from the back of the hall) Haste, Gunnar—call your men to arms!

Gunnar To arms? What for?

Dagny Kaare is coming with a rabble of outlaws. He means you harm. Sigurd has checked him for the moment, but who can tell—

Gunnar (moved) Sigurd has done that for me!

Dagny Sigurd is indeed a faithful friend to you.

Gunnar And we, Hjördis—we that were thinking—! What I said was true, there is witchcraft in every word you speak, any kind of deed seems fair to me when you urge it.

Dagny (in amazement) What do you mean?

Gunnar Nothing, nothing! Thanks for your warning, Dagny, I will away and collect my men. *(Turns towards the door, but stops and comes forward again)* Tell me—how goes it with Örnulf?

Dagny (drooping her head) Do not ask. Last night he bore Thorolf's body to his ship, now he is on the shore digging a grave—for his sons to lie in. *(GUNNAR is silent, and goes out)* There is no danger before the evening. *(Approaches HJÖRDIS)* Hjördis, I have one task still to perform in this house. It was you I was seeking.

Hjördis Me? After what passed yesterday?

Dagny Just on that account. Hjördis, my foster-sister, do not nourish hate against me. Forget the words that grief and a wicked impulse brought to my lips. Forgive me the wrong I have done you—for, believe me, I am now ten times more wretched than you.

Hjördis Wretched? You—Sigurd's wife?

Dagny I am to blame for all that has happened—for

the strife that arose, for Thorolf's death, and for all the shame that Gunnar and you have suffered. It was all my fault! Alas, alas—I was so happy, but never shall I know happiness again after this

Hjördis (as if seized by a sudden thought) But before this—all these five long years—were you happy all that time?

Dagny Can you doubt it?

Hjördis Hm!—yesterday I did not doubt it, but—

Dagny What do you mean?

Hjördis Oh, nothing much. Let us talk of something else

Dagny. No, indeed. *Hjördis*, tell me—!

Hjördis It will do you no good, still, if you wish it—, (*With a malicious expression*) You remember how once, in Iceland yonder, we had been to the meeting of the Thing with Örnulf, and were sitting with our companions in the council hall, as usual, then there came two strangers into the hall.

Dagny Sigurd and Gunnar

Hjördis They greeted us courteously, sat down beside us, and there was much jesting talk between us. And there were some who asked why these two warriors had come to Iceland, and if it were not to find themselves wives there. Then Sigurd said "It will be difficult for me to find the woman my heart will cleave to." Örnulf laughed, and said that in Iceland there was no lack of high-born maidens, or of rich ones either. But Sigurd answered "A hero needs a high-souled wife. She that I shall choose must not be one to be content with an ordinary woman's lot. She must think no honour too great for her to aspire to. When I go on Viking's quest she must be willing to follow me, she must go armed in steel, and spur me on to the fight, and her eyes must be able to bear the flash of sword-blades, for if she should be a craven, she would bring me but small renown." Is it not true that Sigurd spoke so?

Dagny (uneasily) He did—but—

Hjördis Such a woman should she be, who should

make his life happy, and then—(*with a contemptuous smile*) he chose you!

Dagny (with a painful start) Ah, you mean that—?

Hjördís And, no doubt, on that account you have borne yourself proudly and imperiously, and have demanded honour from every one, so that Sigurd should be honoured through you—is it not so?

Dagny No, Hjördís, but—

Hjördís. No doubt you have incited him to heroic deeds, have followed him in arms, and have taken joy in being where the fight was thickest—have you not?

Dagny (deeply moved). No, no!

Hjördís. Then have you been a craven, such as would bring shame to Sigurd?

Dagny (overcome) Hjördís, Hjördís!

Hjördís (with a scornful smile) And yet you have been happy all this time, do you suppose that Sigurd can say the same!

Dagny Let me be. Alas, you have made me see myself only too clearly.

Hjördís One jesting word, and you are in tears immediately! Think no more of it. See, what I have been doing to-day (*Takes some arrows from the table*) See how keen the points are! Do not I know well how to sharpen arrows!

Dagny And how to use them, too! You know how to strike home, Hjördís! All that you have just said to me—I never thought of before (*More courageously*) But to say that Sigurd—! To say that all this time I have made his life unhappy and unhonoured—no, no, that cannot be true!

Hjördís No, no, be comforted, Dagny—indeed it cannot be true. Certainly, if Sigurd were of the same disposition now as he was then, it might be true. Then, all his aim and desire was to be the foremost man in the land—now he is content with a lesser happiness.

Dagny No, Hjördís, Sigurd's mind is set on as great things as ever. I see quite well that I am not a fitting

46 The Warriors at Helgeland [ACT III

wife for him. He has hidden it from me, but it shall be different now

Hjōrdis What do you mean to do?

Dagny I mean to be a burden and a hindrance to him no longer

Hjōrdis Are you thinking of—?

Dagny Silence, someone is coming

(A servant comes from the back of the hall.)

Servant Sigurd the Viking approaches

Hjōrdis Sigurd! Then let Gunnar be summoned

Servant Gunnar has ridden out to assemble his neighbours, because Kaare the yeoman is—

Hjōrdis Yes, yes, I know You may go *(The servant goes out. HJÖRDIS turns to DAGNY, who is preparing to go also)* Where are you going?

Dagny Out of here, so as not to meet Sigurd. The only end there can be to this is our separation, I see that well enough, but to meet him now—no, no, I cannot! *(Goes out to the left)*

Hjōrdis *(looks after her for a moment in silence)*. And it was she that I was going to—*(continues her train of thought, with a glance at the bowstring)* That would have been a paltry vengeance—no, now I have struck a keener blow than that! It is hard to die, but sometimes to go on living is even worse. *(SIGURD comes in from the back)* It is Gunnar you are seeking, I suppose. Sit down, he will be here directly *(Turns to go)*

Sigurd No, stay. It is you I am seeking rather than him

Hjōrdis Me?

Sigurd And it is well that I have found you alone

Hjōrdis If you have come to insult me, a hall full of men and women would be no protection to me

Sigurd Ah, I know very well what you think of me

Hjōrdis *(bitterly)* Perhaps I am doing you an injustice! No, no, Sigurd, you have poisoned my whole life. Remember, it was you that played me that shameful trick, it was you that sat with me in my chamber and

fooled me with talk of love, while all the time you were laughing craftily at me, you flung me to Gunnar, because I was good enough for him—and then you sailed away from Iceland with the woman you loved!

Sigurd There is much that the will of man can accomplish, but great events are directed by fate—and thus it has been with us two.

Hjördis Very true—the cruel Norns rule the world; still, their power is but slight, if they do not find our own hearts respond to them. Happiness waits for whoever is strong enough to defy the Norns—and that I mean to do.

Sigurd What do you mean?

Hjördis I mean to risk a trial of my strength with them, though they be greater than I. But let us talk no more of it, I have much to do to-day. (*Sits down at the table*)

Sigurd (*after a short pause*) You are making good weapons for Gunnar.

Hjördis Not for Gunnar, but against you.

Sigurd It may prove to be the same thing.

Hjördis That may be so, for, if I become as the Norns, then shall you and Gunnar sooner or later—(*She stops, leans backwards against the table, looks at him with a smile, and continues in an altered tone*) Do you know what I think of sometimes? I often take pleasure in devising imaginary scenes. At such times I sit and shut my eyes and think. Now Sigurd the Brave is come to our shores—he threatens to burn down our house and us in it. All Gunnar's men are slain, only he and I are left. They are setting light to the house. "One bowshot," says Gunnar, "a single shot will save us"—and his bowstring breaks. "Hjördis, cut off a tress of your hair, and make a bowstring of it—it will mean saving our lives!" But I laugh, and say "Let it burn, let it burn—life is not worth a handful of hair to me!"

Sigurd There is a strange power in all you say.

(*Draws nearer to her*)

Hjōrdis (looking coldly at him) You—you sit beside me!

Sigurd You think I bear wrath in my heart *Hjōrdis*, this is the last time we shall talk together, there is something that lies like a canker on my soul, and I cannot go away thus, you must know me better before I go

Hjōrdis. What do you want?

Sigurd To tell you a tale

Hjōrdis A sad one?

Sigurd Sad as life itself

Hjōrdis (bitterly) What do you know of the sadness of life?

Sigurd Judge of that, when my tale is told.

Hjōrdis Tell it then; I will work meanwhile.

(He sits down on a stool by her side)

Sigurd Once there were two young warriors, who sailed away from Norway to win riches and fame. They had sworn friendship together, and stood honourably by one another wherever their wanderings led them.

Hjōrdis And the two young warriors' names were Sigurd and Gunnar?

Sigurd Well, we may give them those names. After some time they came to Iceland, where dwelt an old chieftain who had gone thither from Norway in King Harald's time. He had two fair maidens in his house, but one of them, his foster-daughter, far surpassed the other, for she was stout of heart, and the two warriors used to talk of her, and agree that neither of them had seen a goodlier woman.

Hjōrdis (anxiously) Both of them? Are you mocking me?

Sigurd Gunnar thought of her night and day, and so did Sigurd, but neither spoke of their love. On her part, she gave no sign that Gunnar pleased her, on the other hand it was easier to see that Sigurd found no favour in her eyes.

Hjōrdis (breathlessly) Go on, I entreat you—!

Sigurd Well, this only made Sigurd think the more of

her, but he showed it to no one. Then it happened that one evening, at a feast, this proud maiden swore that no man should possess her save the one who should perform a great task that she named. Sigurd's heart beat high with joy, for he felt in him the strength to do the deed, but Gunnar took him apart, and told him of his love—Sigurd said naught of his own, and so it came about that—

Hjördis (interrupting him) Sigurd, Sigurd! (*Controls herself*) And this tale—is it true?

Sigurd It is. One of us had to give way. Gunnar was my friend, I could not have done otherwise than I did. Thus it was that you became Gunnar's wife, and I married another woman.

Hjördis And came to love her?

Sigurd I learnt to esteem her; but there is only one woman Sigurd has ever loved, and that is the woman who set her face against him from the first day they met, (*Rises.*) And so ends my tale, and now let us part—Farewell, wife of Gunnar, we shall never meet again.

Hjördis No, stay! Alas for us both—Sigurd, what have you done?

Sigurd (astomished). What have I done? What ails you?

Hjördis And you tell me all this now! No, no—it cannot be the truth!

Sigurd This is the last time we shall talk together, every word of it is the truth. I wished you to judge more kindly of me, and that is why I had to tell you now.

Hjördis (clasping her hands involuntarily, and looking at him in calm amazement) Loved me—you loved me—you! (*Impetuously, going close up to him*) I do not believe you! (*Fixes her eyes on him and says in an outburst of wild agony*) Yes, it is true—unhappily for us both! (*Covers her face with her hands and draws back*)

Sigurd (in dismay) Hjördis!

Hjördis (quietly, struggling between tears and laughter).

Take no notice of me All I meant was—, (*Lays her hand on his arm*) Sigurd, you have not told all the tale! That proud maiden you spoke of—she loved you too!

Sigurd (recoiling). You!

Hjördis (with composure) Yes, Sigurd, I loved you—I know it now You said I was silent and ungentle with you—what else could a woman do? If I had let my love be seen, you would have thought but little of me. You always seemed to me the goodhest of all men—and to see you the husband of another gave me a bitter pain that I scarcely understood!

Sigurd (shaken) It is a web of woe that the Norns have weaved around us two

Hjördis You have yourself to blame for it! A man should act firmly and bravely! When I set that hard condition on which I was to be won, in very truth I was thinking of you—and then you could—!

Sigurd I knew Gunnar was heart sick, I alone could cure him—how else could I have chosen? Besides, had I known what I now know, I could not have answered for myself, the power of love is too strong

Hjördis (quickly) Well, then, Sigurd—a wretched trick has separated us for these long years, now the knot is untied, the days that are to come shall requite us

Sigurd (shaking his head) That can never be We must part again

Hjördis We must not. I love you, and dare say so now without a blush, for mine is not the light love of a weak woman. If I were a man—by all the Gods, my love could not be stronger than it is! Up, Sigurd! Happiness is worth some great deed to win it. We are both free, if we ourselves will it, and so we may win the game!

Sigurd. Free? What do you mean?

Hjördis What is Dagny to you? What can she ever be to you? No more than Gunnar is to me in my inmost heart. What compulsion is there to spoil two wretched lives!

Sigurd Hjördis, Hjördis!

Hjördis Let Gunnar stay here, let Dagny go back to Iceland with her father, I will put on my armour and follow you wherever you choose to go (*SIGURD moves urgently*) It is not as your wife that I will follow you—for I have belonged to another, and the woman still lives who has been your bedfellow No, Sigurd, not as your wife, but like a splendid Valkyrie will I follow you—urge you on to the fight and to a hero's deeds, so that your name may be famed abroad, when swords are flashing I will stand by your side, and will go with your warriors across the stormy seas wherever fate may lead you, and when your funeral song is sung, it shall honour Sigurd and Hjördis together!

Sigurd That was what I used to dream of once, but now it is too late Gunnar and Dagny stand between us—as they have both the right to do I wasted the love of my youth for Gunnar's sake—if I must suffer for that, at least it must not have been done in vain And Dagny—who left her home and her own people, suspecting nothing and full of trust—never must she think that I yearned for Hjördis as often as she took me in her arms

Hjördis And for such reasons as this would you burden your whole life? What is the good of your power and strength and all your splendid gifts of mind? Do you think that now I could endure to live in Gunnar's house any longer? No, Sigurd, believe me, there is much here that a man like you could achieve Erik is King of Norway, pit yourself against him There are many doughty fighters will range themselves with your own men We will go forward with invincible might, to fight and strive and never rest until you are seated in the King's throne!

Sigurd Hjördis, Hjördis, it was what I used to dream of in my wild youth, let it be forgotten—do not tempt me!

Hjördis (in exaltation) The Norns have decreed that our lives should be bound up together, it cannot be otherwise. Now I see clearly my task in life—to make

you famous You have been in my thoughts every day, every hour I have lived here. I tried to tear you out of my mind, but had not the power Now there is no need—now that I know you love me

Sigurd (forcing himself to speak coldly) If that is so—then, listen, I did love you, but that is all over now—I have forgotten those days

Hjördis It is a lie, Sigurd! This much worth I know I have—that if you once loved me you can never forget it.

Sigurd (vehemently) I must—I will!

Hjördis Maybe—but you cannot! Thwart me if you will, it will do you no good—for before nightfall Gunnar and Dagny shall know all.

Sigurd You would not do that!

Hjördis I would!

Sigurd Then I have known you but ill, I have always imagined you noble-hearted

Hjördis Evil days beget evil thoughts You have put too great a trust in me. I will and must follow you, out into the battle of life! The roof of Gunnar's house is too low for me.

Sigurd (with emphasis) But you have always held men's honour in such high esteem There is reasonable ground of quarrel between Gunnar and me Suppose he were to fall by my hand—would you even then disclose everything and follow me?

Hjördis (with a start) Why do you ask that?

Sigurd. Answer me first What would you do if I slew your husband?

Hjördis (looking fixedly at him) I should keep silence, and never rest until I had brought about your death

Sigurd (with a smile) That is well, Hjördis—I knew it would be so

Hjördis (quickly) But that can never happen!

Sigurd It may, you yourself have cast the die that may decide Gunnar's death or mine

(GUNNAR and some of his men enter from the back)

Gunnar (gloomily, to HJÖRDIS) Well—the seed you have sown is sprouting!

Sigurd (approaching) What has gone amiss with you?

Gunnar Sigurd, is it you! What has gone amiss with me? Nothing but what I might have expected. As soon as Dagny had brought me the news of Kaare, I mounted my horse and rode to seek help among my neighbours.

Hjördis (anxiously) Well?

Gunnar A surly answer met me everywhere. My quarrel with Kaare was an unworthy affair, they said, other things they said, too, that I cannot repeat. I am a dishonoured man, I am accused of having played a coward's part, and it is thought a disgrace to have anything to do with me.

Sigurd It shall not be thought a disgrace long. Before nightfall you shall have plenty of men to go with you against Kaare.

Gunnar Sigurd!

Hjördis (in a low voice, triumphantly) I knew it!

Sigurd (with forced sternness) But it means also that peace is broken between us. Listen to me, Gunnar—you have slain Thorolf, my wife's kinsman, and for that I challenge you to a duel to the death to-morrow at sunrise!

(HJÖRDIS, torn by her emotions, takes a step towards SIGURD, but controls herself and remains motionless during the rest of the scene.)

Gunnar (in profound amazement) A duel!—With me! You are jesting, Sigurd!

Sigurd I formally challenge you to a duel. It will be a question of life and death—one of us must fall!

Gunnar (bitterly) Ah, I understand. You were talking alone with Hjördis when I came in; she has insulted you afresh.

Sigurd Perhaps. *(Turning slightly towards HJÖRDIS)* A noble-spirited woman must defend her husband's honour. *(To the men standing at the back)* And you, fellows, do you go now to Gunnar's neighbours and tell them that to-morrow he is to fight me, none will call that

man a coward who will stand up in fight against Sigurd the Viking.

(The men go out)

Gunnar (goes quickly up to SIGURD and grasps his hand in obvious emotion) Sigurd, my noble brother, I understand now. You are risking your life for my honour, just as once you risked it for my happiness.

Sigurd Thank your wife. She has had most to do with what I have done. To-morrow, at sunrise—

Gunnar I will meet you *(Affectionately)* Foster-brother, will you accept a good sword at my hands? It is a gift of some value.

Sigurd I thank you—but let it hang where it is. Who can tell whether to-morrow night I shall have need of a sword?

Gunnar (grasping his hand) Farewell, Sigurd!

Sigurd Farewell—and may good fortune go with you!

(They part. GUNNAR goes out to the left, SIGURD casts a glance at HJÖRDIS and goes out at the back)

Hjördis (after a pause, in a low and thoughtful voice) A duel to the death in the morning! Which of them will fall? *(Is silent for a short time, then cries out, as if possessed by a sudden resolve)* No matter which of them falls—Sigurd and I shall never be separated!

ACT IV

(SCENE—The seashore. It is evening. Glimpses of the moon are seen in a dark, storm-swept sky. At the back is a lofty, newly-made grave-mound. ÖRNULF is sitting on a rock to the right of the foreground, bareheaded, his elbows resting on his knees and his face hidden in his hands. His men are at work on the grave-mound, to the light of torches. After a short pause SIGURD and DAGNY come out of the boat-shed, in which a fire is burning.)

Dagny (in a low voice) There he sits, still. *(Holds SIGURD back)* No, do not speak to him!

Sigurd You are right, it is too soon, let us leave him alone

Dagny (crosses over and looks at her father with quiet sorrow) He was so brave yesterday, when he bore Thorolf's body upon his back, and so brave while the grave was being dug, but when they had all been laid in it, and the earth and stones heaped over them, then his grief was too great for him—it seemed to crush him, *(Wipes away her tears)* Tell me, *Sigurd*, when do you mean to sail home to Iceland?

Sigurd As soon as this storm is over and I have finished with Gunnar

Dagny. And then you will buy land and build yourself a house, and never go to war again?

Sigurd Yes, yes—I have promised you so

Dagny And I may really believe that *Hjördis* was deceiving me when she said I was no fit wife for you?

Sigurd Yes, yes, *Dagny*—you may believe me

Dagny Then I am happy again, and will try to forget all the horrors I have seen here. In the long winter evenings we will often talk of Gunnar and *Hjördis*, and—

Sigurd No, *Dagny*, as you value our happiness, never let me hear *Hjördis*' name again when we are home in Iceland!

Dagny (gently reproachful). Your hatred of her is unreasonable. *Sigurd*, that is not like you!

One of the Men (approaching) The grave-mound is finished

Örnulf (as if waking from a dream) The grave-mound? Is it—then we must—

Sigurd Speak to him now, *Dagny*

Dagny (going to her father's side) Father, it is cold out here, and a storm is brewing

Örnulf What matter if it is? The grave-mound is solidly built, they will lie warm.

Dagny Yes, but you—

Örnulf I? I am not cold

Dagny You have eaten nothing to-day. Come into the shelter—there is food ready there.

Örnulf Let it bide—I am not hungry.

Dagny But do not sit here like this—believe me, it can do you no good, it is not what you are wont to do

Örnulf You are right, there is something gripping me at the chest, I cannot draw my breath. (*He buries his face again in his hands* After a pause, *DAGNY* sits down beside him)

Dagny To-morrow, will you hoist sail and away to Iceland?

Örnulf (*without looking up*) What should I do there? No, I shall stay with my sons.

Dagny (*with a cry of pain*) Father!

Örnulf (*lifting his head*) Go in, and let me be. When one or two nights of storm have beaten upon me, there will be an end

Sigurd. How can you have such thoughts!

Örnulf Do you wonder that I long for rest? My day's work is done; I have buried my sons (*Impatiently*) Leave me alone!—Go, go!

Sigurd (*in a low voice, to DAGNY, who has got up*) Let him sit awhile longer

Dagny No, I must try one more appeal—I know him. (*To ÖRNULF*) Your day's work is done, you say—but it is not done yet. You have buried your sons, but are you not a bard? Then you must chant a funeral song in their honour

Örnulf A funeral song? No, no Yesterday I might have done that, to-day I am too old

Dagny You must do it. Your sons were all men worthy of honour, they must have their funeral song, and none of their kin can make it but you

Örnulf (*looking questioningly at SIGURD*). A funeral song? What do you say, Sigurd?

Sigurd. I think Dagny is right, you should do as she says

Dagny It will seem to your neighbours in Iceland ill done if, when they drink to the memory of Örnulf's

sons at the funeral feast, there is no funeral song to chant. There is no need to think of following your sons yet,

Örnulf Well, I will try, and do you, Dagny, listen to it, so that afterwards you may carve it in runes !

*(His men group themselves round him with their torches,
He is silent for a little, in thought, and then begins)*

The heart with woe wounded
Cannot laugh with the Song-God ;
Heart-broken, the bard then
Makes a song of his hardship.

To me, too, the Song-God
Gave the gift of the glee-men ;
Let me make with my heartstrings
My loss loud and mournful

The Norns, stern and wrathful,
Have laid waste my life-way,
Have scattered my gladness,
Have wasted my housegear,

Seven sons were to Örnulf,
By the gods freely given
Now he fares forthright lonely :
Not a son left hath Örnulf

Seven sons, seven swordsmen,
Like a bulwark about me,
Like a built wall to harbour
The white-haired old Viking,

Now the wall it is wasted,
Laid low, and my sons lie
Dead, all, while an old man,
In a lone house sits Örnulf

Thorolf, youngest, and bravest
Of brave ones, oh Thorolf !
I could yet be contented,
Had my youngest been left me,

Fair like spring thou wert, Thorolf,
Fair and kind to thy father,
With a light in thy forehead,
The promise of heroes.

But a mortal wound, baleful
And heavy, has crush'd me,
As if my old bosom
Were crush'd between shields.

A jealous Norn leaves me
No rich gift, god-given,
She has sprinkled my pathway
With pain and with trouble.

Weak, worn, my old weapon:
Had I only the gods' arm,
One thing would be left me—
On the Norn to take vengeance!

One thing left to Örnulf.
To fight for her downfall
Who hath seized all he held dear,
And hath taken, last, Thorolf

Hath she seized all? Nay, one thing
The Norn hath not taken:
For Örnulf at birth had
The gods' gift, the song-mead,

My sons she took from me.
But power hath my tongue still
To sing with the Song-God—
Ay, my grief turn to singing,

On my lips did the Norn lay
The fair gift, the song-gift—
Loud my song shall resound, then,
Even here, by my sons' grave

Hail ye! my bright riders!
Hail ye! while ye ride there,
My sons! Let the gods' gift
Heal the woe, the world-anguish!

(He draws a deep breath, pushes the hair back from his forehead, and says calmly)

Ah!—now Ærnulf is himself again. *(To his men.)*
Come to supper, my lads, we have had a heavy day's
work *(Goes with them into the boat-shed)*

Dagny Thanks to the gods above, that put such good
counsel into my mind! *(To SIGURD)* Are you not
going in

Sigurd No, I have no fancy to. Tell me, is every-
thing ready for to-morrow?

Dagny Everything A shroud, sewn with silk, lies
upon the bench within; but I have shed no tears over it,
for I know well that you will be a match for Gunnar

Sigurd May the gods grant that you may never shed
tears on my account. *(Stops and looks into the distance.)*

Dagny What are you listening to?

Sigurd Do you not hear—over there? *(Points to the left)*

Dagny Yes, it sounds like a storm over the sea!

Sigurd *(going towards the background)* There will be
hard hailstones from this storm *(Calls)* Who comes
there?

Kaare *(from without)* Folk that you know, Sigurd!
(KAARE, with a rabble of armed men, comes in from the left)

Sigurd Where are you going?

Kaare To Gunnar's house!

Sigurd As foes?

Kaare Yes, trust us for that! You hindered me
before, but now I expect this will be to your liking

Sigurd Maybe

Kaare I have heard of your business with Gunnar;
but, if I have my way, it will be with weak weapons that
he goes to the duel,

Sigurd It is dangerous work you are thinking of, have a care, Kaare!

Kaare (with a defiant laugh) Leave that to me! If you want to rig your ship to-night, I will furnish you with a light to see by!—Come, all of you, here is the path! (*They go out*)

Dagny Sigurd, Sigurd, you must prevent this disaster!

Sigurd (goes to the door of the shed, and calls in) Up Örnulf—avenge yourself on Kaare!

Örnulf (coming out with his men) Kaare!—where is he?

Sigurd He is making for Gunnar's house, to burn it down over his head!

Örnulf Aha—let him, then! That will avenge me on Gunnar and Hjördis at one stroke. I will look for Kaare later.

Sigurd No, that is profitless talk! You must look for Kaare to-night, if you wish to strike at him. As soon as he has done this foul deed, he will take to the hills. I have challenged Gunnar to a duel, he will not escape you, even supposing I do not— Well, it is no matter, to-night he must be protected from his foes, for it would be a disgrace if an outlawed wretch like Kaare were to steal my vengeance from me!

Örnulf That is true. I will protect Gunnar to-night, but to-morrow he must die.

Sigurd Either he or I—of that you may be certain.

Örnulf Vengeance, then, for Örnulf's kinsmen!
(*Rushes out with his men*)

Sigurd Dagny, go with him! I must stay here, for the news of our duel has spread far and wide, and I must not meet Gunnar before the time has come. But you must guide and advise your father. He must act honourably. In Gunnar's house there are many women, no harm must come to Hjördis or the others.

Dagny Yes, yes, I will go with him. You are thoughtful even for Hjördis, thank you for that, Sigurd.

Sigurd. Go, go, Dagny!

Dagny I am going, but we need not fear for Hjordis—she has a suit of golden armour in her chamber, and can defend herself

Sigurd So I think But go now, be your father's guide, and watch over them all and—over Gunnar's wife!

Dagny Trust to me Farewell, till we meet again!
(*Goes out*)

Sigurd This is the first time, foster-brother, that I have not taken up arms when you were in danger,
(*Listens*) I hear cries and sword-blows—they are at the house already (*Turns to go, but stops suddenly and starts back in amazement*) Hjördís! Is she come here?

(*HJÖRDÍS enters hastily, dressed in a short scarlet kirtle and golden armour, helmet, coat of mail, arm-pieces and greaves, her hair is flying loose, on her back a quiver is slung, and she carries a small shield at her belt, in her hand is the bow with the bowstring of her own hair. She keeps looking behind her, as if in fear of something that followed her, goes close to SIGURD, catches him by the arm, and whispers to him*)

Hjördís Sigurd, Sigurd, can you see it?

Sigurd What? Where?

Hjördís The wolf—just behind me! It does not move—it glares at me with two red eyes!—It is my familiar, Sigurd! It has appeared to me three times; that means that I shall surely die to-night!

Sigurd Hjördís! Hjördís!

Hjördís Now he has disappeared into the ground! I have had my warning

Sigurd You are ill, come into shelter!

Hjördís No, I will wait here, I have not much more time!

Sigurd What has come over you?

Hjördís. What has come over me? I cannot tell; but what you said to-day was true, that Gunnar and Dagny stand between us. We must get away from them and from life, then we shall be together

Sigurd. We? Ah, you mean—!

Hjördis (with exaltation) I have known no real home since the day you took another woman to wife. It was a wicked deed you did then! There is only one gift a man may not give to his dearest friend—and that is, the woman he loves, for if he does that, he breaks the thread of fate that the Norn has spun, and two lives are ruined. There is a voice within me that tells me surely that my destiny was that my strong soul should encourage and support you when things went ill with you, and that yours was to let me find, in one man's love, all that was bravest and best in manhood. For this I know, Sigurd, that if our lives had been united you would have become the most renowned man, and I the happiest woman, in the world!

Sigurd Such regrets are useless now. Do you suppose I can see any happiness in the life that lies before me? To be by Dagny's side every day, and to pretend a love that my heart shrinks from. However, it must be so, it cannot be altered.

Hjördis (with growing excitement) It shall be! We will both leave this life! Do you see this bowstring? I shall hit surely with this, for I have sung the goodliest spells of magic over it! (*Stretches the bow and fits an arrow to it*) Listen! Listen, how the wind howls! It is the last ride of the dead men, my spells have called them hither. We shall follow in their train!

Sigurd (recoiling) Hjördis, Hjördis—I am afraid of you!

Hjördis (without heeding him) No power can alter our fate now! After all, it is better so, than if we had been married in this life, better than sitting in your house weaving linen and wool, and bearing children to you—ugh!

Sigurd Stop, stop! Your magic arts have overwrought your mind, your soul has sickened under them. (*In alarm*) Ah, look—look! Gunnar's house—it is burning!

Hjördis Let it burn! Let it burn! The mansions of the clouds are better than Gunnar's wooden halls!

Sigurd But Egil, your son—they are killing him!

Hjördis Let him die—and then my shame will die with him!

Sigurd And Gunnar—they are taking your husband's life!

Hjördis What matter to me! I shall follow a better husband home to-night! Yes, Sigurd, it must be so. This country holds no happiness for me. The White God is coming northwards, I will not stay to meet him. The old gods are not as mighty as they were, they are asleep, or sit like shadows of themselves, we will wrest their power from them. Out of this life, Sigurd, I will set you on the throne of heaven, and sit beside you there! (*The storm rages wildly*) Listen, listen! There come our companions! Do you see the black horses flying by—one for you and one for me! (*Raises her bow and shoots him*) Now to your last journey!

Sigurd A goodly shot, Hjördis! (*Falls*)

Hjördis (*in triumph, while she rushes towards him*), Sigurd, my brother—now we belong to one another!

Sigurd Now less than ever. Here our ways part—for I am a Christian

Hjördis (*dismayed*) You! Oh, no, no!

Sigurd The White God is my god. King Athelstan taught me to know Him—it is to Him I am going now

Hjördis (*in despair*) And I—! (*Lets her bow fall*) Alas, alas!

Sigurd My life has been oppressed with sorrow since the hour I tore you out of my heart and gave you to Gunnar. Thanks, Hjördis—now my heart is light and free! (*Dies*)

Hjördis (*quietly*) Dead! And I have made shipwreck of my life! (*The storm increases. She cries in a wild outburst*) There they come! My witchcraft has brought them! No, no—I will not go with them! I will not ride without Sigurd! It is no use—they see me, they laugh and beckon to me, they are spurring their horses! (*Rushes to the edge of the cliff*) They are upon

me—and no shelter, nowhere to hide! Yes, perhaps in the depths of the sea! (*Throws herself down*)

(ÖRNULF, DAGNY, GUNNAR carrying EGIL, come in one by one from the right, followed by SIGURD's men)

Örnulf (*turning to the grave-mound*) Now I can sleep in peace, for you are not unavenged, my sons!

Dagny Father, father—I am wellnigh dead with fear! The ways are red with blood, and the storm!—listen, listen!

Gunnar (*with EGIL in his arms*) Let me come in peace and shelter my child!

Örnulf Gunnar!

Gunnar. Yes, Örnulf, my house is burnt and my men all slain I am in your power—do what you will with me!

Örnulf That rests with Sigurd. But come into shelter, it is not safe out here!

Dagny Yes—in, in! (*Goes towards the boat-shed, sees SIGURD's dead body, and shrieks*) Sigurd, my husband!—they have killed him! (*Throws herself down beside him*)

Örnulf Sigurd!

Gunnar (*setting EGIL down*) Sigurd killed!

Dagny (*looking wildly at them as they stand by the corpse*). No, no, it is not true!—he must be alive still (*Sees the bow*) Ah, what is that! (*Gets up*)

Örnulf Daughter, it is as you said at first—Sigurd is slain

Gunnar (*as if seized by a sudden thought*) And Hjördis!—Has Hjördis been here?

Dagny (*in a low voice, meaningly*) I do not know, but this I know, that her bow has been here

Gunnar Ah, I feared it!

Dagny Hush, hush! (*To herself*) How bitterly she must have hated him!

Gunnar (*in a low voice*) Killed him—the night before the duel, at last she loved me, then

(*All start suddenly as they hear, huriling through the air the last ride of the dead warriors*)

Egil (in terror) Father! Look, look!

Gunnar What is it?

Egil Up there—all those black horses—!

Gunnar. It is only the clouds—

Örnulf. No, it is the last ride of the dead.

Egil (with a shriek) Mother is with them!

Dagny Merciful gods!

Gunnar Child, what are you saying?

Egil There—in front—on the black horse! Father! father! *(Clings to his father in terror. A short pause, then the storm passes over, the clouds part, and the moon shines out over all the scene)*

Gunnar (quietly and sadly) Now we know she is dead

Örnulf Yes, Gunnar—and it was she rather than you that was the object of my vengeance. Our meeting has cost us both dear, there is my hand—let there be peace and forgiveness between us

Gunnar Thanks, Örnulf! And now, to the ships I am for Iceland with you!

Örnulf Yes, to Iceland—and long shall this journey be remembered

Long remembered shall these heroes
Be, in all our northern land,
And our children's tongues shall honour
Those that sleep upon this strand.

GHOSTS

A Domestic Drama in Three Acts.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

Mrs Alving (a widow).

Oswald Alving (her son, an artist).

Manders (the Pastor of the parish)

Engstrand (a carpenter)

Regina Engstrand (his daughter, in Mrs Alving's
service)

*(The action takes place at Mrs Alving's house on one of the larger
fjords of western Norway)*

GHOSTS

ACT I

(SCENE — *A large room looking upon a garden. A door in the left-hand wall, and two in the right. In the middle of the room, a round table with chairs set about it, and books, magazines and newspapers upon it. In the foreground on the left, a window, by which is a small sofa with a work-table in front of it. At the back the room opens into a conservatory rather smaller than the room. From the right-hand side of this a door leads to the garden. Through the large panes of glass that form the outer wall of the conservatory, a gloomy fjord landscape can be discerned, half obscured by steady rain.*)

ENGSTRAND *is standing close up to the garden door. His left leg is slightly deformed, and he wears a boot with a clump of wood under the sole.* REGINA, *with an empty garden-syringe in her hand, is trying to prevent his coming in.*)

Regina (*below her breath*) What is it you want? Stay where you are. The rain is dripping off you.

Engstrand God's good rain, my girl.

Regina The Devil's own rain, that's what it is!

Engstrand Lord, how you talk, Regina (*Takes a few limping steps forward*) What I wanted to tell you was this—

Regina Don't clump about like that, stupid! The young master is lying asleep upstairs.

Engstrand Asleep still? In the middle of the day?

Regina Well, it's no business of yours.

Engstrand I was out on the spree last night—

Regina. I don't doubt it.

Engstrand Yes, we are poor weak mortals, my girl—

Regina. We are indeed.

Engstrand —and the temptations of the world are manifold, you know—but, for all that, here I was at my work at half-past five this morning

Regina Yes, yes, but make yourself scarce now I am not going to stand here as if I had a *rendez-vous* with you

Engstrand As if you had a what?

Regina I am not going to have any one find you here, so now you know, and you can go

Engstrand (*coming a few steps nearer*) Not a bit of it! Not before we have had a little chat This afternoon I shall have finished my job down at the school house, and I shall be off home to town by to-night's boat

Regina (*mutters*) Pleasant journey to you!

Engstrand Thanks, my girl To-morrow is the opening of the Orphanage, and I expect there will be a fine kick-up here and plenty of good strong drink, don't you know And no one shall say of Jacob Engstrand that he can't hold off when temptation comes in his way

Regina Oho!

Engstrand Yes, because there will be a lot of fine folk here to-morrow Parson Manders is expected from town, too

Regina What is more, he's coming to-day

Engstrand There you are! And I'm going to be precious careful he doesn't have anything to say against me, do you see?

Regina Oh, that's your game, is it?

Engstrand What do you mean?

Regina (*with a significant look at him*) What is it you want to humbug Mr Manders out of, this time?

Engstrand Sh! Sh! Are you crazy? Do you suppose I would want to humbug Mr Manders? No, no—Mr Manders has always been too kind a friend for me to do that But what I wanted to talk to you about, was my going back home to-night,

Regina The sooner you go, the better I shall be pleased

Engstrand Yes, only I want to take you with me,
Regina

Regina (*open-mouthed*) You want to take me—?
What did you say?

Engstrand I want to take you home with me, I said

Regina (*contemptuously*) You will never get me home
with you

Engstrand Ah, we shall see about that

Regina Yes, you can be quite certain we *shall* see
about that I, who have been brought up by a lady
like Mrs Alving?—I, who have been treated almost as
if I were her own child?—do you suppose I am going
home with you?—to such a house as yours? Not likely!

Engstrand What the devil do you mean? Are you
setting yourself up against your father, you hussy?

Regina (*mutters, without looking at him*) You have
often told me I was none of yours

Engstrand Bah!—why do you want to pay any atten-
tion to that?

Regina Haven't you many and many a time abused
me and called me a —? For shame!

Engstrand I'll swear I never used such an ugly
word

Regina Oh, it doesn't matter what word you used

Engstrand Besides, that was only when I was a bit
fuddled—hm! Temptations are manifold in this world,
Regina

Regina Ugh!

Engstrand And it was when your mother was in a
nasty temper I had to find some way of getting my
knife into her, my girl She was always so precious gen-
teel. (*Mimicking her*) "Let go, Jacob! Let me
be! Please to remember that I was three years with
the Alvings at Rosenvold, and they were people who
went to Court!" (*Laughs*) Bless my soul, she never
could forget that Captain Alving got a Court appoint-
ment while she was in service here

Regina Poor mother—you worried her into her grave
pretty soon

Engstrand (*shrugging his shoulders*) Of course, of course, I have got to take the blame for everything

Regina (*beneath her breath, as she turns away*) Ugh—that leg, too!

Engstrand What are you saying, my girl?

Regina *Pied de mouton*

Engstrand Is that English?

Regina Yes

Engstrand You have had a good education out here, and no mistake, and it may stand you in good stead now, Regina

Regina (*after a short silence*) And what was it you wanted me to come to town for?

Engstrand Need you ask why a father wants his only child? Ain't I a poor lonely widower?

Regina Oh, don't come to me with that tale Why do you want me to go?

Engstrand Well, I must tell you I am thinking of taking up a new line now

Regina (*whistles*) You have tried that so often—but it has always proved a fool's errand

Engstrand Ah, but this time you will just see, Regina! Strike me dead if—

Regina (*stamping her foot*) Stop swearing!

Engstrand Sh! Sh!—you're quite right, my girl, quite right! What I wanted to say was only this, that I have put by a tidy penny out of what I have made by working at this new Orphanage up here

Regina Have you? All the better for you

Engstrand What is there for a man to spend his money on, out here in the country?

Regina Well, what then?

Engstrand Well, you see, I thought of putting the money into something that would pay I thought of some kind of an eating-house for seafaring folk—

Regina Heavens!

Engstrand Oh, a high-class eating-house, of course,—not a pigsty for common sailors Damn it, no, it would be a place ships' captains and first mates would come to; really good sort of people, you know

Regina And what should I—?

Engstrand You would help there But only to make a show, you know You wouldn't find it hard work, I can promise you, my girl You should do exactly as you liked

Regina Oh, yes, quite so!

Engstrand But we must have some women in the house, that is as clear as daylight. Because in the evening we must make the place a little attractive—some singing and dancing, and that sort of thing Remember they are seafolk—wayfarers on the waters of life! (*Coming nearer to her.*) Now don't be a fool and stand in your own way, Regina What good are you going to do here? Will this education, that your mistress has paid for, be of any use? You are to look after the children in the new Home, I hear. Is that the sort of work for you? Are you so frightfully anxious to go and wear out your health and strength for the sake of these dirty brats?

Regina No, if things were to go as I want them to, then—. Well, it may happen, who knows? It may happen!

Engstrand What may happen?

Regina Never you mind Is it much that you have put by, up here?

Engstrand Taking it all round, I should say about forty or fifty pounds

Regina That's not so bad

Engstrand It's enough to make a start with, my girl.

Regina Don't you mean to give me any of the money?

Engstrand No, I'm hanged if I do

Regina Don't you mean to send me as much as a dress-length of stuff, just for once?

Engstrand Come and live in the town with me and you shall have plenty of dresses

Regina Pooh!—I can get that much for myself, if I have a mind to

Engstrand But it's far better to have a father's guiding hand, Regina Just now I can get a nice house in Little Harbour Street. They don't want much money

down for it—and we could make it like a sort of seamen's home, don't you know

Regina But I have no intention of living with you! I have nothing whatever to do with you So now, be off!

Engstrand You wouldn't be living with me long, my girl No such luck—not if you knew how to play your cards Such a fine wench as you have grown this last year or two—

Regina Well—?

Engstrand It wouldn't be very long before some first mate came along—or perhaps a captain

Regina I don't mean to marry a man of that sort. Sailors have no *savoir-vivre*

Engstrand. What haven't they got?

Regina I know what sailors are, I tell you. They aren't the sort of people to marry

Engstrand Well, don't bother about marrying them. You can make it pay just as well (*More confidentially*) That fellow—the Englishman—the one with the yacht—he gave seventy pounds, he did, and she wasn't a bit prettier than you

Regina (*advancing towards him*). Get out!

Engstrand (*stepping back*) Here! here!—you're not going to hit me, I suppose?

Regina Yes! If you talk like that of mother, I will hit you Get out, I tell you! (*Pushes him up to the garden door*) And don't bang the doors Young Mr Alving—

Engstrand Is asleep—I know It's funny how anxious you are about young Mr Alving (*In a lower tone*) Oho! is it possible that it is *he* that—?

Regina Get out, and be quick about it! Your wits are wandering, my good man. No, don't go that way, Mr Manders is just coming along Be off down the kitchen stairs

Engstrand (*moving towards the right*) Yes, yes—all right But have a bit of a chat with him that's coming along. He's the chap to tell you what a child owes to

its father. For I am your father, anyway, you know. I can prove it by the Register (*He goes out through the farther door which REGINA has opened. She shuts it after him, looks hastily at herself in the mirror, fans herself with her handkerchief and sets her collar straight, then busies herself with the flowers. MANDERS enters the conservatory through the garden door. He wears an overcoat, carries an umbrella, and has a small travelling-bag slung over his shoulder on a strap.*)

Manders Good morning, Miss Engstrand.

Regina (*turning round with a look of pleased surprise*). Oh, Mr Manders, good morning. The boat is in, then?

Manders Just in (*Comes into the room*). It is most tiresome, this rain every day.

Regina (*following him in*). It's a splendid rain for the farmers, Mr Manders.

Manders Yes, you are quite right. We town-folk think so little about that. (*Begins to take off his overcoat*.)

Regina Oh, let me help you. That's it. Why, how wet it is! I will hang it up in the hall. Give me your umbrella, too, I will leave it open, so that it will dry.

(*She goes out with the things by the farther door on the right. MANDERS lays his bag and his hat down on a chair. REGINA re-enters.*)

Manders Ah, it's very pleasant to get indoors. Well, is everything going on well here?

Regina Yes, thanks.

Manders Properly busy, though, I expect, getting ready for to-morrow?

Regina Oh, yes, there is plenty to do.

Manders. And Mrs Alving is at home, I hope?

Regina Yes, she is. She has just gone upstairs to take the young master his chocolate.

Manders Tell me—I heard down at the pier that Oswald had come back.

Regina Yes, he came the day before yesterday. We didn't expect him till to-day.

Manders Strong and well, I hope?

Regina Yes, thank you, well enough. But dreadfully tired after his journey. He came straight from Paris without a stop—I mean, he came all the way without breaking his journey. I fancy he is having a sleep now, so we must talk a little bit more quietly, if you don't mind.

Manders All right, we will be very quiet.

Regina (*while she moves an armchair up to the table*). Please sit down, Mr Manders, and make yourself at home. (*He sits down, she puts a footstool under his feet*) There! Is that comfortable?

Manders Thank you, thank you. That is most comfortable. (*Looks at her*) I'll tell you what, Miss Engstrand, I certainly think you have grown since I saw you last.

Regina Do you think so? Mrs. Alving says, too, that I have developed.

Manders Developed? Well, perhaps a little—just suitably. (*A short pause*)

Regina Shall I tell Mrs Alving you are here?

Manders Thanks, there is no hurry, my dear child.—Now tell me, Regina my dear, how has your father been getting on here?

Regina Thank you, Mr Manders, he is getting on pretty well.

Manders He came to see me, the last time he was in town.

Regina Did he? He is always so glad when he can have a chat with you.

Manders And I suppose you have seen him pretty regularly every day?

Regina I? Oh, yes, I do—whenever I have time, that is to say.

Manders Your father has not a very strong character, Miss Engstrand. He sadly needs a guiding hand.

Regina Yes, I can quite believe that.

Manders He needs someone with him that he can cling to, someone whose judgment he can rely on. He

acknowledged that freely himself, the last time he came up to see me

Regina Yes, he has said something of the same sort to me But I don't know whether Mrs Alving could do without me—most of all just now, when we have the new Orphanage to see about And I should be dreadfully unwilling to leave Mrs. Alving, too, she has always been so good to me

Manders. But a daughter's duty, my good child—, Naturally we should have to get your mistress' consent first,

Regina. Still I don't know whether it would be quite the thing, at my age, to keep house for a single man

Manders What!! My dear Miss Engstrand, it is your own father we are speaking of!

Regina Yes, I dare say, but still—. Now, if it were in a good house and with a real gentleman—

Manders But, my dear Regina—

Regina. —one whom I could feel an affection for, and really feel in the position of a daughter to—

Manders. Come, come—my dear good child—

Regina I should like very much to live in town, Out here it is terribly lonely, and you know yourself, Mr. Manders, what it is to be alone in the world And, though I say it, I really am both capable and willing. Don't you know any place that would be suitable for me, Mr Manders?

Manders I? No, indeed I don't.

Regina But, dear Mr. Manders—at any rate don't forget me, in case—

Manders (getting up) No, I won't forget you, Miss Engstrand,

Regina Because, if I—

Manders Perhaps you will be so kind as to let Mrs. Alving know I am here?

Regina I will fetch her at once, Mr Manders (*Goes out to the left* *MANDERS walks up and down the room once or twice, stands for a moment at the farther end of the room with his hands behind his back and looks out into the garden Then he comes back to the table, takes up a book*

and looks at the title page, gives a start, and looks at some of the others)

Manders Hm!—Really!

(*MRS ALVING comes in by the door on the left. She is followed by REGINA, who goes out again at once through the nearer door on the right.*)

Mrs Alving (holding out her hand) I am very glad to see you, Mr Manders

Manders How do you do, Mrs Alving Here I am, as I promised

Mrs Alving Always punctual!

Manders Indeed, I was hard put to it to get away. What with vestry meetings and committees—

Mrs Alving It was all the kinder of you to come in such good time, we can settle our business before dinner. But where is your luggage?

Manders (quickly) My things are down at the village shop. I am going to sleep there to-night.

Mrs Alving (repressing a smile) Can't I really persuade you to stay the night here this time?

Manders No, no, many thanks all the same, I will put up there, as usual. It is so handy for getting on board the boat again.

Mrs Alving Of course you shall do as you please. But it seems to me quite another thing, now we are two old people—

Manders Ha! ha! You will have your joke! And it's natural you should be in high spirits to-day—first of all there is the great event to-morrow, and also you have got Oswald home.

Mrs Alving Yes, am I not a lucky woman! It is more than two years since he was home last, and he has promised to stay the whole winter with me.

Manders Has he, really? That is very nice and filial of him, because there must be many more attractions in his life in Rome or in Paris, I should think.

Mrs Alving Yes, but he has his mother here, you see. Bless the dear boy, he has got a corner in his heart for his mother still,

Manders Oh, it would be very sad if absence and pre-occupation with such a thing as Art were to dull the natural affections

Mrs Alving It would, indeed But there is no fear of that with him, I am glad to say I am quite curious to see if you recognise him again. He will be down directly, he is just lying down for a little on the sofa upstairs. But do sit down, my dear friend

Manders Thank you You are sure I am not disturbing you?

Mrs Alving Of course not. (*She sits down at the table*)

Manders Good Then I will show you— (*He goes to the chair where his bag is lying and takes a packet of papers from it, then sits down at the opposite side of the table and looks for a clear space to put the papers down*) Now first of all, here is—(*breaks off*) Tell me, Mrs Alving, what are these books doing here?

Mrs Alving These books? I am reading them.

Manders Do you read this sort of thing?

Mrs. Alving Certainly I do

Manders Do you feel any the better or the happier for reading books of this kind?

Mrs Alving I think it makes me, as it were, more self-reliant

Manders That is remarkable But why?

Mrs Alving Well, they give me an explanation or a confirmation of lots of different ideas that have come into my own mind But what surprises me, Mr Manders, is that, properly speaking, there is nothing at all new in these books There is nothing more in them than what most people think and believe The only thing is, that most people either take no account of it or won't admit it to themselves

Manders But, good heavens, do you seriously think that most people—?

Mrs Alving Yes, indeed, I do

Manders But not here in the country at any rate? Not here amongst people like ourselves?

Mrs Alving Yes, amongst people like ourselves too

Manders Well, really, I must say—I

Mrs Alving But what is the particular objection that you have to these books?

Manders What objection? You surely don't suppose that I take any particular interest in such productions?

Mrs Alving In fact, you don't know anything about what you are denouncing?

Manders I have read quite enough about these books to disapprove of them.

Mrs Alving Yes, but your own opinion—

Manders My dear Mrs Alving, there are many occasions in life when one has to rely on the opinion of others. That is the way in this world, and it is quite right that it should be so. What would become of society, otherwise?

Mrs Alving Well, you may be right.

Manders Apart from that, naturally I don't deny that literature of this kind may have a considerable attraction. And I cannot blame you, either, for wishing to make yourself acquainted with the intellectual tendencies which I am told are at work in the wider world in which you have allowed your son to wander for so long. But—

Mrs Alving But—?

Manders (*lowering his voice*) But one doesn't talk about it, Mrs Alving. One certainly is not called upon to account to every one for what one reads or thinks in the privacy of one's own room.

Mrs Alving Certainly not. I quite agree with you.

Manders Just think of the consideration you owe to this Orphanage, which you decided to build at a time when your thoughts on such subjects were very different from what they are now—as far as I am able to judge.

Mrs Alving Yes, I freely admit that. But it was about the Orphanage—

Manders. It was about the Orphanage we were going

to talk, quite so. Well—walk warily, dear Mrs Alving! And now let us turn to the business in hand. (*Opens an envelope and takes out some papers*) You see these?

Mrs Alving The deeds?

Manders Yes, the whole lot—and everything in order. I can tell you it has been no easy matter to get them in time. I had positively to put pressure on the authorities, they are almost painfully conscientious when it is a question of settling property. But here they are at last. (*Turns over the papers*) Here is the deed of conveyance of that part of the Rosenvold estate known as the Solvik property, together with the buildings newly erected thereon—the school, the masters' houses and the chapel. And here is the legal sanction for the statutes of the institution. Here, you see—(*reads*) "Statutes for the Captain Alving Orphanage."

Mrs Alving (*after a long look at the papers*) That seems all in order.

Manders I thought "Captain" was the better title to use, rather than your husband's Court title of "Chamberlain." "Captain" seems less ostentatious.

Mrs Alving Yes, yes, just as you think best.

Manders And here is the certificate for the investment of the capital in the bank, the interest being earmarked for the current expenses of the Orphanage.

Mrs Alving Many thanks, but I think it will be most convenient if you will kindly take charge of them.

Manders With pleasure. I think it will be best to leave the money in the bank for the present. The interest is not very high, it is true, four per cent at six months' call. Later on, if we can find some good mortgage—of course it must be a first mortgage and on unexceptionable security—we can consider the matter further.

Mrs. Alving Yes, yes, my dear Mr Manders, you know best about all that.

Manders I will keep my eye on it, anyway. But there is one thing in connection with it that I have often meant to ask you about.

Mrs. Alving What is that?

Manders Shall we insure the buildings, or not?

Mrs. Alving Of course we must insure them

Manders. Ah, but wait a moment, dear lady. Let us look into the matter a little more closely.

Mrs. Alving Everything of mine is insured—the house and its contents, my livestock—everything

Manders Naturally. They are your own property. I do exactly the same, of course. But this, you see, is quite a different case. The Orphanage is, so to speak, dedicated to higher uses

Mrs. Alving Certainly, but—

Manders As far as I am personally concerned, I can conscientiously say that I don't see the smallest objection to our insuring ourselves against all risks

Mrs. Alving That is exactly what I think

Manders. But what about the opinion of the people hereabouts?

Mrs. Alving Their opinion—?

Manders Is there any considerable body of opinion here—opinion of some account, I mean—that might take exception to it?

Mrs. Alving What, exactly, do you mean by opinion of some account?

Manders Well, I was thinking particularly of persons of such independent and influential position that one could hardly refuse to attach weight to their opinion.

Mrs. Alving There are a certain number of such people here, who might perhaps take exception to it if we—

Manders That's just it, you see. In town there are lots of them. All my fellow-clergymen's congregations, for instance! It would be so extremely easy for them to interpret it as meaning that neither you nor I had a proper reliance on Divine protection

Mrs. Alving But as far as you are concerned, my dear friend, you have at all events the consciousness that—

Manders. Yes I know I know my own mind is quite

easy about it, it is true. But we should not be able to prevent a wrong and injurious interpretation of our action. And that sort of thing, moreover, might very easily end in exercising a hampering influence on the work of the Orphanage.

Mrs. Alving Oh, well, if that is likely to be the effect of it—

Manders Nor can I entirely overlook the difficult—indeed, I may say, painful—position I might possibly be placed in. In the best circles in town the matter of this Orphanage is attracting a great deal of attention. Indeed the Orphanage is to some extent built for the benefit of the town too, and it is to be hoped that it may result in the lowering of our poor-rate by a considerable amount. But as I have been your adviser in the matter and have taken charge of the business side of it, I should be afraid that it would be I that spiteful persons would attack first of all—

Mrs. Alving Yes, you ought not to expose yourself to that.

Manders Not to mention the attacks that would undoubtedly be made upon me in certain newspapers and reviews—

Mrs. Alving Say no more about it, dear Mr. Manders, that quite decides it.

Manders Then you don't wish it to be insured?

Mrs. Alving No, we will give up the idea.

Manders (*leaning back in his chair*) But suppose, now, that some accident happened?—one can never tell—would you be prepared to make good the damage?

Mrs. Alving No, I tell you quite plainly I would not do so under any circumstances.

Manders Still, you know, Mrs. Alving—after all, it is a serious responsibility that we are taking upon ourselves.

Mrs. Alving But do you think we can do otherwise?

Manders No, that's just it. We really can't do otherwise. We ought not to expose ourselves to a mistaken judgment, and we have no right to do anything that will scandalise the community.

Mrs Alving. You ought not to, as a clergyman, at any rate

Manders And, what is more, I certainly think that we may count upon our enterprise being attended by good fortune—indeed, that it will be under a special protection.

Mrs Alving Let us hope so, Mr. Manders,

Manders Then we will leave it alone?

Mrs Alving Certainly

Manders Very good As you wish. (*Makes a note*)
No insurance, then

Mrs Alving It's a funny thing that you should just have happened to speak about that to-day—

Manders I have often meant to ask you about it—

Mrs Alving —because yesterday we very nearly had a fire up there.

Manders Do you mean it!

Mrs Alving. Oh, as a matter of fact it was nothing of any consequence. Some shavings in the carpenter's shop caught fire.

Manders Where Engstrand works?

Mrs Alving Yes They say he is often so careless with matches

Manders He has so many things on his mind, poor fellow—so many anxieties Heaven be thanked, I am told he is really making an effort to live a blameless life,

Mrs Alving. Really? Who told you so?

Manders He assured me himself that it is so He's a good workman, too

Mrs Alving Oh, yes, when he is sober

Manders Ah, that sad weakness of his! But the pain in his poor leg often drives him to it, he tells me. The last time he was in town, I was really quite touched by him. He came to my house and thanked me so gratefully for getting him work here, where he could have the chance of being with Regina.

Mrs Alving He doesn't see very much of her

Manders But he assured me that he saw her every day.

Mrs Alving Oh well, perhaps he does

Manders He feels so strongly that he needs some one who can keep a hold on him when temptations assail him. That is the most winning thing about Jacob Engstrand; he comes to one like a helpless child and accuses himself and confesses his frailty. The last time he came and had a talk with me— Suppose now, Mrs Alving, that it were really a necessity of his existence to have Regina at home with him again—

Mrs Alving (standing up suddenly) Regina!

Manders —you ought not to set yourself against him.

Mrs Alving Indeed, I set myself very definitely against that. And, besides, you know Regina is to have a post in the Orphanage

Manders But consider, after all he is her father—

Mrs Alving I know best what sort of a father he has been to her. No, she shall never go to him with my consent.

Manders (getting up) My dear lady, don't judge so hastily. It is very sad how you misjudge poor Engstrand. One would really think you were afraid—

Mrs Alving (more calmly) That is not the question. I have taken Regina into my charge, and in my charge she remains. (*Listen*) Hush, dear Mr Manders, don't say any more about it. (*Her face brightens with pleasure*) Listen! Oswald is coming downstairs. We will only think about him now

(OSWALD ALVING, in a light overcoat, hat in hand and smoking a big meerschaum pipe, comes in by the door on the left)

Oswald (standing in the doorway) Oh, I beg your pardon, I thought you were in the office. (*Comes in*) Good morning, Mr Manders

Manders (staring at him) Well! It's most extraordinary—

Mrs Alving Yes, what do you think of him, Mr Manders?

Manders I—I—no, can it possibly be—?

Oswald Yes, it really is the prodigal son, Mr Manders,

Manders Oh, my dear young friend—

Oswald Well, the son come home, then.

Mrs Alving Oswald is thinking of the time when you were so opposed to the idea of his being a painter

Manders We are only fallible, and many steps seem to us hazardous at first, that afterwards—(*grasps his hand*) Welcome, welcome! Really, my dear Oswald—may I still call you Oswald?

Oswald What else would you think of calling me?

Manders Thank you. What I mean, my dear Oswald, is that you must not imagine that I have any unqualified disapproval of the artist's life. I admit that there are many who, even in that career, can keep the inner man free from harm.

Oswald Let us hope so

Mrs Alving (*beaming with pleasure*) I know one who has kept both the inner and the outer man free from harm. Just take a look at him, Mr Manders

Oswald (*walks across the room*) Yes, yes, mother dear, of course

Manders Undoubtedly—no one can deny it. And I hear you have begun to make a name for yourself. I have often seen mention of you in the papers—and extremely favourable mention, too. Although, I must admit, latterly I have not seen your name so often.

Oswald (*going towards the conservatory*) I haven't done so much painting just lately.

Mrs Alving An artist must take a rest sometimes, like other people.

Manders Of course, of course. At those times the artist is preparing and strengthening himself for a greater effort.

Oswald Yes. Mother, will dinner soon be ready?

Mrs Alving In half an hour. He has a fine appetite, thank goodness.

Manders And a liking for tobacco too.

Oswald I found father's pipe in the room upstairs, and—

Manders. Ah, that is what it was!

Mrs Alving What?

Manders When Oswald came in at that door with the pipe in his mouth, I thought for the moment it was his father in the flesh.

Oswald Really?

Mrs Alving How can you say so! Oswald takes after me

Manders Yes, but there is an expression about the corners of his mouth—something about the lips—that reminds me so exactly of Mr. Alving—especially when he smokes

Mrs Alving I don't think so at all To my mind, Oswald has much more of a clergyman's mouth

Manders Well, yes—a good many of my colleagues in the church have a similar expression

Mrs Alving But put your pipe down, my dear boy I don't allow any smoking in here

Oswald (puts down his pipe) All right, I only wanted to try it, because I smoked it once when I was a child

Mrs Alving You?

Oswald Yes, it was when I was quite a little chap And I can remember going upstairs to father's room one evening when he was in very good spirits.

Mrs Alving. Oh, you can't remember anything about those days.

Oswald Yes, I remember plainly that he took me on his knee and let me smoke his pipe "Smoke, my boy," he said, "have a good smoke, boy!" And I smoked as hard as I could, until I felt I was turning quite pale and the perspiration was standing in great drops on my forehead Then he laughed—such a hearty laugh—

Manders It was an extremely odd thing to do

Mrs Alving Dear Mr Manders, Oswald only dreamt it

Oswald No indeed, mother, it was no dream Because—don't you remember—you came into the room and carried me off to the nursery, where I was sick, and I saw that you were crying Did father often play such tricks?

Manders In his young days he was full of fun—

Oswald And, for all that, he did so much with his life—so much that was good and useful, I mean—short as his life was

Manders Yes, my dear Oswald Alving, you have inherited the name of a man who undoubtedly was both energetic and worthy. Let us hope it will be a spur to your energies—

Oswald It ought to be, certainly

Manders In any case it was nice of you to come home for the day that is to honour his memory

Oswald I could do no less for my father

Mrs Alving And to let me keep him so long here—that's the nicest part of what he has done

Manders Yes, I hear you are going to spend the winter at home

Oswald I am here for an indefinite time, Mr Manders—Oh, it's good to be at home again!

Mrs Alving (*beaming*) Yes, isn't it?

Manders (*looking sympathetically at him*) You went out into the world very young, my dear Oswald

Oswald I did Sometimes I wonder if I wasn't too young.

Mrs Alving Not a bit of it. It is the best thing for an active boy, and especially for an only child It's a pity when they are kept at home with their parents and get spoilt.

Manders That is a very debatable question, Mrs. Alving. A child's own home is, and always must be, his proper place.

Oswald There I agree entirely with Mr Manders

Manders Take the case of your own son Oh yes, we can talk about it before him What has the result been in his case? He is six or seven and twenty, and has never yet had the opportunity of learning what a well-regulated home means.

Oswald Excuse me, Mr Manders, you are quite wrong there

Manders Indeed? I imagined that your life abroad had practically been spent entirely in artistic circles

Oswald. So it has

Manders And chiefly amongst the younger artists.

Oswald Certainly

Manders But I imagined that those gentry, as a rule, had not the means necessary for family life and the support of a home

Oswald There are a considerable number of them who have not the means to marry, Mr Manders

Manders That is exactly my point

Oswald. But they can have a home of their own, all the same, a good many of them have And they are very well-regulated and very comfortable homes, too

(*MRS ALVING, who has listened to him attentively, nods assent, but says nothing*)

Manders Oh, but I am not talking of bachelor establishments By a home I mean family life—the life a man lives with his wife and children

Oswald. Exactly, or with his children and his children's mother

Manders (*starts and clasps his hands*) Good heavens!

Oswald What is the matter?

Manders Lives with—with—his children's mother!

Oswald Well, would you rather he should repudiate his children's mother?

Manders Then what you are speaking of are those unprincipled conditions known as irregular unions!

Oswald I have never noticed anything particularly unprincipled about these people's lives

Manders But do you mean to say that it is possible for a man of any sort of bringing up, and a young woman, to reconcile themselves to such a way of living—and to make no secret of it, either!

Oswald What else are they to do? A poor artist, and a poor girl—it costs a good deal to get married What else are they to do?

Manders What are they to do? Well, Mr Alving, I will tell you what they ought to do They ought to keep away from each other from the very beginning—that is what they ought to do!

Oswald That advice wouldn't have much effect upon hot-blooded young folk who are in love

Mrs Alving No, indeed it wouldn't

Manders (*persistently*) And to think that the authorities tolerate such things! That they are allowed to go on, openly! (*Turns to MRS ALVING*) Had I so little reason, then, to be sadly concerned about your son? In circles where open immorality is rampant—where, one may say, it is honoured—

Oswald Let me tell you this, Mr Manders I have been a constant Sunday guest at one or two of these "irregular" households—

Manders On Sunday, too!

Oswald Yes, that is the day of leisure But never have I heard one objectionable word there, still less have I ever seen anything that could be called immoral No, but do you know when and where I *have* met with immorality in artists' circles?

Manders No, thank heaven, I don't!

Oswald Well, then, I shall have the pleasure of telling you I have met with it when some one or other of your model husbands and fathers have come out there to have a bit of a look round on their own account, and have done the artists the honour of looking them up in their humble quarters Then we had a chance of learning something, I can tell you These gentlemen were able to instruct us about places and things that we had never so much as dreamt of

Manders What? Do you want me to believe that honourable men when they get away from home will—

Oswald Have you never, when these same honourable men come home again, heard them deliver themselves on the subject of the prevalence of immorality abroad?

Manders Yes, of course, but—

Mrs Alving I have heard them, too

Oswald Well, you can take their word for it, unhesitatingly Some of them are experts in the matter (*Putting his hands to his head*) To think that the

glorious freedom of the beautiful life over there should be so besmirched !

Mrs Alving You mustn't get too heated, Oswald, you gain nothing by that

Oswald No, you are quite right, mother Besides, it isn't good for me It's because I am so infernally tired, you know I will go out and take a turn before dinner. I beg your pardon, Mr Manders It is impossible for you to realise the feeling, but it takes me that way
(*Goes out by the farther door on the right*)

Mrs Alving My poor boy !

Manders You may well say so This is what it has brought him to ! (MRS ALVING *looks at him, but does not speak*) He called himself the prodigal son It's only too true, alas—only too true ! (MRS ALVING *looks steadily at him*) And what do you say to all this ?

Mrs Alving I say that Oswald was right in every single word he said

Manders Right? Right? To hold such principles as that?

Mrs Alving In my loneliness here I have come to just the same opinions as he, Mr Manders But I have never presumed to venture upon such topics in conversation Now there is no need, my boy shall speak for me.

Manders You deserve the deepest pity, Mrs Alving It is my duty to say an earnest word to you It is no longer your business man and adviser, no longer your old friend and your dead husband's old friend, that stands before you now. It is your priest that stands before you, just as he did once at the most critical moment of your life

Mrs Alving And what is it that my priest has to say to me?

Manders First of all I must stir your memory The moment is well chosen To-morrow is the tenth anniversary of your husband's death, to-morrow the memorial to the departed will be unveiled, to-morrow I shall speak to the whole assembly that will be met together. But to-day I want to speak to you alone

Mrs Alving. Very well, Mr Manders, speak!

Manders. Have you forgotten that after barely a year of married life you were standing at the very edge of a precipice?—that you forsook your house and home?—that you ran away from your husband—yes, Mrs Alving, ran away, ran away—and refused to return to him in spite of his requests and entreaties?

Mrs Alving. Have you forgotten how unspeakably unhappy I was during that first year?

Manders. To crave for happiness in this world is simply to be possessed by a spirit of revolt. What right have we to happiness? No! we must do our duty, Mrs Alving. And your duty was to cleave to the man you had chosen and to whom you were bound by a sacred bond.

Mrs Alving. You know quite well what sort of a life my husband was living at that time—what excesses he was guilty of.

Manders. I know only too well what rumour used to say of him, and I should be the last person to approve of his conduct as a young man, supposing that rumour spoke the truth. But it is not a wife's part to be her husband's judge. You should have considered it your bounden duty humbly to have borne the cross that a higher will had laid upon you. But, instead of that, you rebelliously cast off your cross, you deserted the man whose stumbling footsteps you should have supported, you did what was bound to imperil your good name and reputation, and came very near to imperilling the reputation of others into the bargain.

Mrs Alving. Of others? Of one other, you mean.

Manders. It was the height of imprudence, your seeking refuge with me.

Mrs Alving. With our priest? With our intimate friend?

Manders. All the more on that account. You should thank God that I possessed the necessary strength of mind—that I was able to turn you from your outrageous intention, and that it was vouchsafed to me to succeed

in leading you back into the path of duty and back to your lawful husband

Mrs Alving Yes, Mr Manders, that certainly was your doing.

Manders I was but the humble instrument of a higher power And is it not true that my having been able to bring you again under the yoke of duty and obedience sowed the seeds of a rich blessing on all the rest of your life? Did things not turn out as I foretold to you? Did not your husband turn from straying in the wrong path, as a man should? Did he not, after that, live a life of love and good report with you all his days? Did he not become a benefactor to the neighbourhood? Did he not so raise you up to his level, so that by degrees you became his fellow-worker in all his undertakings—and a noble fellow-worker, too, I know, Mrs Alving, that praise I will give you—But now I come to the second serious false step in your life

Mrs Alving What do you mean?

Manders Just as once you forsook your duty as a wife, so, since then, you have forsaken your duty as a mother.

Mrs Alving Oh—!

Manders You have been overmastered all your life by a disastrous spirit of wilfulness All your impulses have led you towards what is undisciplined and lawless. You have never been willing to submit to any restraint. Anything in life that has seemed irksome to you, you have thrown aside recklessly and unscrupulously, as if it were a burden that you were free to rid yourself of if you would It did not please you to be a wife any longer, and so you left your husband Your duties as a mother were irksome to you, so you sent your child away among strangers

Mrs Alving Yes, that is true, I did that

Manders And that is why you have become a stranger to him

Mrs Alving No, no, I am not that!

Manders You are, you must be And what sort

of a son is it that you have got back? Think over it seriously, Mrs Alving You erred grievously in your husband's case—you acknowledge as much, by erecting this memorial to him Now you are bound to acknowledge how much you have erred in your son's case, possibly there may still be time to reclaim him from the paths of wickedness Turn over a new leaf, and set yourself to reform what there may still be that is capable of reformation in him Because (*with uplifted forefinger*) in very truth, Mrs Alving, you are a guilty mother!—That is what I have thought it my duty to say to you.

(*A short silence*)

Mrs Alving (*speaking slowly and with self-control*) You have had your say, Mr Manders, and to-morrow you will be making a public speech in memory of my husband I shall not speak to-morrow But now I wish to speak to you for a little, just as you have been speaking to me

Manders By all means, no doubt you wish to bring forward some excuses for your behaviour—

Mrs Alving No I only want to tell you something.

Manders Well?

Mrs Alving In all that you said just now about me and my husband, and about our life together after you had, as you put it, led me back into the path of duty—there was nothing that you knew at first hand From that moment you never again set foot in our house—you, who had been our daily companion before that

Manders Remember that you and your husband moved out of town immediately afterwards

Mrs Alving Yes, and you never once came out here to see us in my husband's lifetime It was only the business in connection with the Orphanage that obliged you to come and see me

Manders (*in a low and uncertain voice*) Helen—if that is a reproach, I can only beg you to consider—

Mrs Alving —the respect you owed to your calling?—yes All the more as I was a wife who had tried to

run away from her husband One can never be too careful to have nothing to do with such reckless women

Manders My dear—Mrs Alving, you are exaggerating dreadfully—

Mrs Alving Yes, yes,—very well What I mean is this, that when you condemn my conduct as a wife you have nothing more to go upon than ordinary public opinion

Manders I admit it. What then?

Mrs. Alving Well—now, Mr Manders, now I am going to tell you the truth I had sworn to myself that you should know it one day—you, and you only!

Manders And what may the truth be?

Mrs Alving The truth is this, that my husband died just as great a profligate as he had been all his life

Manders (feeling for a chair) What are you saying?

Mrs Alving After nineteen years of married life, just as profligate—in his desires at all events—as he was before you married us

Manders. And can you talk of his youthful indiscretions—his irregularities—his excesses, if you like—as a profligate life!

Mrs Alving That was what the doctor who attended him called it

Manders I don't understand what you mean.

Mrs Alving It is not necessary you should

Manders It makes my brain reel To think that your marriage—all the years of wedded life you spent with your husband—were nothing but a hidden abyss of misery

Mrs Alving That and nothing else. Now you know

Manders This—this bewilders me I can't understand it! I can't grasp it! How in the world was it possible—? How could such a state of things remain concealed?

Mrs. Alving That was just what I had to fight for incessantly, day after day. When Oswald was born, I thought I saw a slight improvement But it didn't last long And after that I had to fight doubly hard—fight a desperate fight so that no one should know what

sort of a man my child's father was. You know quite well what an attractive manner he had, it seemed as if people could believe nothing but good of him. He was one of those men whose mode of life seems to have no effect upon their reputations. But at last, Mr Manders—you must hear this too—at last something happened more abominable than everything else.

Manders More abominable than what you have told me!

Mrs Alving I had borne with it all, though I knew only too well what he indulged in in secret, when he was out of the house. But when it came to the point of the scandal coming within our four walls—

Manders Can you mean it! Here?

Mrs Alving Yes, here, in our own home. It was in there (*pointing to the nearer door on the right*) in the dining-room that I got the first hint of it. I had something to do in there and the door was standing ajar. I heard our maid come up from the garden with water for the flowers in the conservatory.

Manders Well—?

Mrs Alving Shortly afterwards I heard my husband come in too. I heard him say something to her in a low voice. And then I heard—(*with a short laugh*)—oh, it rings in my ears still, with its mixture of what was heartbreaking and what was so ridiculous—I heard my own servant whisper “Let me go, Mr Alving! Let me be!”

Manders What unseemly levity on his part! But surely nothing more than levity, Mrs Alving, believe me.

Mrs Alving I soon knew what to believe. My husband had his will of the girl—and that intimacy had consequences, Mr Manders.

Manders (*as if turned to stone*) And all that in this house! In this house!

Mrs Alving I have suffered a good deal in this house. To keep him at home in the evening—and at night—I have had to play the part of boon companion in his secret

drinking-bouts in his room up there I have had to sit there alone with him, have had to hobnob and drink with him, have had to listen to his ribald senseless talk, have had to fight with brute force to get him to bed—

Manders (trembling) And you were able to endure all this!

Mrs Alving I had my little boy, and endured it for his sake. But when the crowning insult came—when my own servant—then I made up my mind that there should be an end of it. I took the upper hand in the house, absolutely—both with him and all the others. I had a weapon to use against him, you see, he didn't dare to speak. It was then that Oswald was sent away. He was about seven then, and was beginning to notice things and ask questions as children will. I could endure all that, my friend. It seemed to me that the child would be poisoned if he breathed the air of this polluted house. That was why I sent him away. And now you understand, too, why he never set foot here as long as his father was alive. No one knows what it meant to me.

Manders You have indeed had a pitiable experience.

Mrs Alving I could never have gone through with it, if I had not had my work. Indeed, I can boast that I have worked. All the increase in the value of the property, all the improvements, all the useful arrangements that my husband got the honour and glory of—do you suppose that he troubled himself about any of them? He, who used to lie the whole day on the sofa reading old Official Lists! No, you may as well know that too. It was I that kept him up to the mark when he had his lucid intervals; it was I that had to bear the whole burden of it when he began his excesses again or took to whining about his miserable condition.

Manders And this is the man you are building a memorial to!

Mrs Alving There you see the power of an uneasy conscience.

Manders An uneasy conscience? What do you mean?

Mrs Alving I had always before me the fear that

it was impossible that the truth should not come out and be believed That is why the Orphanage is to exist, to silence all rumours and clear away all doubt.

Marders You certainly have not fallen short of the mark in that, Mrs Alving

Mrs Alving I had another very good reason I did not wish Oswald, my own son, to inherit a penny that belonged to his father

Manders Then it is with Mr Alving's property—

Mrs Alving Yes The sums of money that, year after year, I have given towards this Orphanage, make up the amount of property—I have reckoned it carefully—which in the old days made Lieutenant Alving a catch

Manders I understand

Mrs Alving That was my purchase money I don't wish it to pass into Oswald's hands My son shall have everything from me, I am determined

(OSWALD comes in by the farther door on the right He has left his hat and coat outside)

Mrs Alving Back again, my own dear boy?

Oswald Yes, what can one do outside in this ever lasting rain? I hear dinner is nearly ready That's good!

(REGINA comes in from the dining-room, carrying a parcel)

Regina This parcel has come for you, ma'am *(Gives it to her)*

Mrs Alving (glancing at MANDERS) The ode to be sung to-morrow, I expect.

Manders. Hm—!

Regina And dinner is ready

Mrs Alving Good We will come in a moment. I will just—*(begins to open the parcel)*

Regina (to OSWALD) Will you drink white or red wine, sir?

Oswald Both, Miss Engstrand

Regina Bien—very good, Mr Alving *(Goes into the dining-room)*

Oswald I may as well help you to uncork it—. *(Fol-*

lows her into the dining-room, leaving the door ajar after him)

Mrs Alving Yes, I thought so Here is the ode, Mr Manders

Manders (clasping his hands) How shall I ever have the courage to-morrow to speak the address that—

Mrs Alving Oh, you will get through it

Manders (in a low voice, fearing to be heard in the dining-room) Yes, we must raise no suspicions

Mrs Alving (quietly but firmly) No, and then this long dreadful comedy will be at an end After to-morrow, I shall feel as if my dead husband had never lived in this house There will be no one else here then but my boy and his mother

(From the dining-room is heard the noise of a chair falling, then REGINA'S voice is heard in a loud whisper Oswald! Are you mad? Let me go!)

Mrs Alving (startling in horror) Oh—!

(She stares wildly at the half-open door OSWALD is heard coughing and humming, then the sound of a bottle being uncorked)

Manders (in an agitated manner) What's the matter? What is it, Mrs Alving?

Mrs Alving (hoarsely) Ghosts The couple in the conservatory—over again

Manders What are you saying! Regina—? Is she—?

Mrs. Alving Yes Come. Not a word—!

(Grips MANDERS by the arm and walks unsteadily with him into the dining-room)

ACT II

(The same scene The landscape is still obscured by mist MANDERS and MRS ALVING come in from the dining-room)

Mrs Alving (calls into the dining-room from the doorway) Aren't you coming in here, Oswald?

Oswald No, thanks, I think I will go out for a bit

Mrs Alving Yes, do, the weather is clearing a little *(She shuts the dining-room door, then goes to the hall door and calls)* Regina!

Regina (from without) Yes, ma'am?

Mrs Alving Go down into the laundry and help with the garlands

Regina Yes, ma'am

(MRS ALVING satisfies herself that she has gone, then shuts the door)

Manders I suppose he can't hear us?

Mrs Alving Not when the door is shut. Besides, he is going out

Manders I am still quite bewildered I don't know how I managed to swallow a mouthful of your excellent dinner

Mrs Alving (walking up and down, and trying to control her agitation) Nor I But what are we to do?

Manders Yes, what are we to do? Upon my word I don't know, I am so completely unaccustomed to things of this kind

Mrs Alving I am convinced that nothing serious has happened yet

Manders Heaven forbid! But it is most unseemly behaviour, for all that

Mrs Alving It is nothing more than a foolish jest of Oswald's, you may be sure.

Manders Well, of course, as I said, I am quite inexperienced in such matters, but it certainly seems to me—

Mrs. Alving. Out of the house she shall go—and at once That part of it is as clear as daylight—

Manders Yes, that is quite clear

Mrs Alving But where is she to go? We should not be justified in—

Manders Where to? Home to her father, of course.

Mrs Alving To whom, did you say?

Manders To her— No, of course Engstrand isn't—, But, great heavens, Mrs. Alving, how is such a thing possible? You surely may have been mistaken, in spite of everything

Mrs Alving There was no chance of mistake, more's the pity Joanna was obliged to confess it to me—and my husband couldn't deny it. So there was nothing else to do but to hush it up

Manders No, that was the only thing to do

Mrs Alving The girl was sent away at once, and was given a tolerably liberal sum to hold her tongue She looked after the rest herself when she got to town She renewed an old acquaintance with the carpenter Engstrand, gave him a hint, I suppose, of how much money she had got, and told him some fairy tale about a foreigner who had been here in his yacht in the summer So she and Engstrand were married in a great hurry Why, you married them yourself!

Manders I can't understand it— I remember clearly Engstrand's coming to arrange about the marriage He was full of contrition, and accused himself bitterly for the light conduct he and his fiancée had been guilty of

Mrs Alving. Of course he had to take the blame on himself

Manders. But the deceitfulness of it! And with me, too! I positively would not have believed it of Jacob Engstrand I shall most certainly give him a serious talking to—And the immorality of such a marriage! Simply for the sake of the money—! What sum was it that the girl had?

Mrs Alving It was seventy pounds.

Manders. Just think of it—for a paltry seventy pounds to let yourself be bound in marriage to a fallen woman!

Mrs Alving What about myself, then?—I let myself be bound in marriage to a fallen man

Manders Heaven forgive you! what are you saying? A fallen man?

Mrs Alving Do you suppose my husband was any purer, when I went with him to the altar, than Joanna was when Engstrand agreed to marry her?

Manders The two cases are as different as day from night—

Mrs Alving Not so very different, after all. It is true there was a great difference in the price paid, between a paltry seventy pounds and a whole fortune

Manders How can you compare such totally different things! I presume you consulted your own heart—and your relations

Mrs Alving (*looking away from him*) I thought you understood where what you call my heart had strayed to at that time

Manders (*in a constrained voice*) If I had understood anything of the kind, I would not have been a daily guest in your husband's house

Mrs Alving Well, at any rate this much is certain, that I didn't consult myself in the matter at all

Manders Still you consulted those nearest to you, as was only right—your mother, your two aunts

Mrs Alving Yes, that is true. The three of them settled the whole matter for me. It seems incredible to me now, how clearly they made out that it would be sheer folly to reject such an offer. If my mother could only see what all that fine prospect has led to!

Manders No one can be responsible for the result of it. Anyway there is this to be said, that the match was made in complete conformity with law and order

Mrs Alving (*going to the window*) Oh, law and order! I often think it is that that is at the bottom of all the misery in the world.

Manders Mrs Alving, it is very wicked of you to say that

Mrs Alving That may be so, but I don't attach importance to those obligations and considerations any longer I cannot! I must struggle for my freedom

Manders What do you mean?

Mrs Alving (*tapping on the window panes*) I ought never to have concealed what sort of a life my husband led. But I had not the courage to do otherwise then—for my own sake, either. I was too much of a coward

Manders A coward?

Mrs Alving If others had known anything of what happened, they would have said "Poor man, it is natural enough that he should go astray, when he has a wife that has run away from him"

Manders They would have had a certain amount of justification for saying so

Mrs Alving (*looking fixedly at him*) If I had been the woman I ought, I would have taken Oswald into my confidence and said to him "Listen, my son, your father was a dissolute man"—

Manders Miserable woman—

Mrs Alving —and I would have told him all I have told you, from beginning to end

Manders I am almost shocked at you, Mrs. Alving

Mrs Alving I know I know quite well! I am shocked at myself when I think of it (*Comes away from the window*) I am coward enough for that

Manders Can you call it cowardice that you simply did your duty! Have you forgotten that a child should love and honour his father and mother?

Mrs Alving Don't let us talk in such general terms. Suppose we say "Ought Oswald to love and honour Mr Alving?"

Manders You are a mother—isn't there a voice in your heart that forbids you to shatter your son's ideals?

Mrs Alving And what about the truth?

Manders What about his ideals?

Mrs Alving Oh—ideals, ideals! If only I were not such a coward as I am!

Manders Do not spurn ideals, Mrs Alving—they have a way of avenging themselves cruelly. Take Oswald's own case, now. He hasn't many ideals, more's the pity. But this much I have seen, that his father is something of an ideal to him.

Mrs Alving You are right there.

Manders And his conception of his father is what you inspired and encouraged by your letters.

Mrs Alving Yes, I was swayed by duty and consideration for others, that was why I lied to my son, year in and year out. Oh, what a coward—what a coward I have been!

Manders You have built up a happy illusion in your son's mind, Mrs Alving—and that is a thing you certainly ought not to undervalue.

Mrs Alving Ah, who knows if that is such a desirable thing after all!—But anyway I don't intend to put up with any goings on with Regina. I am not going to let him get the poor girl into trouble.

Manders Good heavens, no—t. ^lte _vbl ^uld be a frightful thing!

Mrs Alving If only I knew whether he meant it seriously, and whether it would mean happiness for him—

Manders In what way? I don't understand.

Mrs Alving But that is impossible, Regina is not equal to it, unfortunately.

Manders, I don't understand. What do you mean?

Mrs. Alving If I were not such a miserable coward, I would say to him "Marry her, or make any arrangement you like with her—only let there be no deceit in the matter."

Manders Heaven forgive you! Are you actually suggesting anything so abominable, so unheard of, as a marriage between them!

Mrs Alving Unheard of, do you call it? Tell me honestly, Mr Manders, don't you suppose there are

plenty of married couples out here in the country that are just as nearly related as they are?

Manders I am sure I don't understand you

Mrs Alving Indeed you do.

Manders. I suppose you are thinking of cases where possibly—. It is only too true, unfortunately, that family life is not always as stainless as it should be. But as for the sort of thing you hint at—well, it's impossible to tell, at all events with any certainty. Here, on the other hand—for you, a mother, to be willing to allow your—

Mrs Alving But I am not willing to allow it. I would not allow it for anything in the world, that is just what I was saying

Manders. No, because you are a coward, as you put it. But, supposing you were not a coward—! Great heavens—such a revolting union!

Mrs Alving Well, for the matter of that, we are all descended from a union of that description, so we are told. And who was it that was responsible for this state of things, Mr Manders?

Manders I can't discuss such questions with you, Mrs Alving, you are by no means in the right frame of mind for that. But for you to dare to say that it is cowardly of you—!

Mrs Alving I will tell you what I mean by that. I am frightened and timid, because I am obsessed by the presence of ghosts that I never can get rid of.

Manders The presence of what?

Mrs Alving. Ghosts. When I heard Regina and Oswald in there, it was just like seeing ghosts before my eyes. I am half inclined to think we are all ghosts, Mr. Manders. It is not only what we have inherited from our fathers and mothers that exists again in us, but all sorts of old dead ideas and all kinds of old dead beliefs and things of that kind. They are not actually alive in us, but there they are dormant, all the same, and we can never be rid of them. Whenever I take up a newspaper and read it, I fancy I see ghosts creeping between

the lines There must be ghosts all over the world
(They must be as countless as the grains of the sands, it
seems to me And we are so miserably afraid of the
light, all of us

Manders Ah!—there we have the outcome of your
reading Fine fruit it has borne—this abominable,
subversive, free-thinking literature!

Mrs Alving You are wrong there, my friend
You are the one who made me begin to think, and I
owe you my best thanks for it.

Manders I!

Mrs Alving Yes, by forcing me to submit to what
you called my duty and my obligations, by praising
as right and just what my whole soul revolted against,
as it would against something abominable That was
what led me to examine your teachings critically I
only wanted to unravel one point in them, but as soon
as I had got that unravelled, the whole fabric came to
pieces And then I realised that it was only machine-
made

Manders (*softly, and with emotion*) Is that all I
accomplished by the hardest struggle of my life?

Mrs Alving Call it rather the most ignominious defeat
of your life

Manders. It was the greatest victory of my life,
Helen, victory over myself

Mrs Alving It was a wrong done to both of us

Manders A wrong?—wrong for me to entreat you
as a wife to go back to your lawful husband, when you
came to me half distracted and crying “Here I am,
take me!” Was that a wrong?

Mrs Alving I think it was

Manders We two do not understand one another.

Mrs Alving Not now, at all events

Manders Never—even in my most secret thoughts—
have I for a moment regarded you as anything but the
wife of another

Mrs Alving Do you believe what you say?

Manders Helen—!

Mrs Alving One so easily forgets one's own feelings

Manders Not I I am the same as I always was

Mrs Alving Yes, yes—don't let us talk any more about the old days You are buried up to your eyes now in committees and all sorts of business, and I am here, fighting with ghosts both without and within me.

Manders I can at all events help you to get the better of those without you After all that I have been horrified to hear you from to-day, I cannot conscientiously allow a young defenceless girl to remain in your house

Mrs Alving Don't you think it would be best if we could get her settled?—by some suitable marriage, I mean

Manders Undoubtedly. I think, in any case, it would have been desirable for her Regina is at an age now that—well, I don't know much about these things, but—

Mrs Alving Regina developed very early

Manders Yes, didn't she I fancy I remember thinking she was remarkably well developed, bodily, at the time I prepared her for Confirmation. But, for the time being, she must in any case go home Under her father's care—no, but of course Engstrand is not— To think that he, of all men, could so conceal the truth from me!

(A knock is heard at the hall door)

Mrs. Alving Who can that be? Come in!

(ENGSTRAND, dressed in his Sunday clothes, appears in the doorway)

Engstrand I humbly beg pardon, but—

Manders Aha! Hm!—

Mrs Alving Oh, it's you, Engstrand!

Engstrand There were none of the maids about, so I took the great liberty of knocking

Mrs Alving That's all right Come in Do you want to speak to me?

Engstrand (coming in) No, thank you very much, ma'am It was Mr Manders I wanted to speak to for a moment.

Manders (walking up and down) Hm!—do you. You want to speak to me, do you?

Engstrand Yes, sir, I wanted so very much to—

Manders (stopping in front of him) Well, may I ask what it is you want?

Engstrand It's this way, Mr Manders We are being paid off now And many thanks to you, Mrs Alving And now the work is quite finished, I thought it would be so nice and suitable if all of us, who have worked so honestly together all this time, were to finish up with a few prayers this evening

Manders Prayers? Up at the Orphanage?

Engstrand Yes, sir, but if it isn't agreeable to you, then—

Manders Oh, certainly—but—hm!—

Engstrand I have made a practice of saying a few prayers there myself each evening—

Mrs Alving Have you?

Engstrand Yes, ma'am, now and then—just as a little edification, so to speak But I am only a poor common man, and haven't rightly the gift, alas—and so I thought that as Mr. Manders happened to be here, perhaps—

Manders. Look here, Engstrand. First of all I must ask you a question Are you in a proper frame of mind for such a thing? Is your conscience free and untroubled?

Engstrand Heaven have mercy on me a sinner! My conscience isn't worth our speaking about, Mr. Manders

Manders. But it is just what we must speak about. What do you say to my question?

Engstrand My conscience? Well—it's uneasy sometimes, of course.

Manders Ah, you admit that at all events Now will you tell me, without any concealment—what is your relationship to Regina?

Mrs Alving (hastily) Mr Manders!

Manders (calming her)—Leave it to me!

Engstrand With Regina? Good Lord, how you frightened me! (*Looks at MRS ALVING*) There is nothing wrong with Regina, is there?

Manders. Let us hope not. What I want to know is, what is your relationship to her? You pass as her father, don't you?

Engstrand (unsteadily) Well—hm!—you know, sir, what happened between me and my poor Joanna.

Manders No more distortion of the truth! Your late wife made a full confession to Mrs Alving, before she left her service.

Engstrand. What!—do you mean to say—? Did she do that after all?

Manders You see it has all come out, Engstrand.

Engstrand Do you mean to say that she, who gave me her promise and solemn oath—

Manders Did she take an oath?

Engstrand Well, no—she only gave me her word, but as seriously as a woman could.

Manders And all these years you have been hiding the truth from me—from me, who have had such complete and absolute faith in you.

Engstrand I am sorry to say I have, sir.

Manders Did I deserve that from you, Engstrand? Haven't I been always ready to help you in word and deed as far as lay in my power? Answer me! Is it not so?

Engstrand Indeed there's many a time I should have been very badly off without you, sir.

Manders And this is the way you repay me—by causing me to make false entries in the church registers, and afterwards keeping back from me for years the information which you owed it both to me and to your sense of the truth to divulge. Your conduct has been absolutely inexcusable, Engstrand, and from to-day everything is at an end between us.

Engstrand (with a sigh) Yes, I can see that's what it means.

Manders Yes, because how can you possibly justify what you did?

Engstrand Was the poor girl to go and increase her load of shame by talking about it? Just suppose, sir, for a moment that your reverence was in the same predicament as my poor Joanna—

Manders I!

Engstrand Good Lord, sir, I don't mean the same predicament I mean, suppose there were something your reverence were ashamed of in the eyes of the world, so to speak We men oughtn't to judge a poor woman too hardly, Mr Manders

Manders But I am not doing so at all. It is you I am blaming

Engstrand Will your reverence grant me leave to ask you a small question?

Manders Ask away

Engstrand Shouldn't you say it was right for a man to raise up the fallen?

Manders Of course it is

Engstrand, And isn't a man bound to keep his word of honour?

Manders Certainly he is, but—

Engstrand At the time when Joanna had her misfortune with this Englishman—oh maybe he was an American or a Russian, as they call 'em—well, sir, then she came to town Poor thing, she had refused me once or twice before, she only had eyes for good-looking men in those days, and I had this crooked leg then. Your reverence will remember how I had ventured up into a dancing-saloon where seafaring men were revelling in drunkenness and intoxication, as they say And when I tried to exhort them to turn from their evil ways—

Mrs Alving (coughs from the window) Ahem!

Manders I know, Engstrand, I know—the rough brutes threw you downstairs. You have told me about that incident before The affliction to your leg is a credit to you

Engstrand I don't want to claim credit for it, your reverence. But what I wanted to tell you was that she came then and confided in me with tears and

gnashing of teeth. I can tell you, sir, it went to my heart to hear her.

Manders Did it, indeed, Engstrand? Well, what then?

Engstrand Well, then I said to her. "The American is roaming about on the high seas, he is And you, Joanna," I said, "you have committed a sin and are a fallen woman But here stands Jacob Engstrand," I said, "on two strong legs"—of course that was only speaking in a kind of metaphor, as it were, your reverence

Manders. I quite understand Go on

Engstrand Well, sir, that was how I rescued her and made her my lawful wife, so that no one should know how recklessly she had carried on with the stranger

Manders That was all very kindly done The only thing I cannot justify was your bringing yourself to accept the money—

Engstrand Money? I? Not a farthing

Manders (to MRS ALVING, in a questioning tone). But—

Engstrand Ah, yes!—wait a bit; I remember now. Joanna did have a trifle of money, you are quite right But I didn't want to know anything about that "Fie," I said, "on the mammon of unrighteousness, it's the price of your sin, as for this tainted gold"—or notes, or whatever it was—"we will throw it back in the American's face," I said But he had gone away and disappeared on the stormy seas, your reverence

Manders Was that how it was, my good fellow?

Engstrand It was, sir. So then Joanna and I decided that the money should go towards the child's bringing-up, and that's what became of it, and I can give a faithful account of every single penny of it

Manders This alters the complexion of the affair very considerably

Engstrand That's how it was, your reverence. And I make bold to say that I have been a good father

to Regina—as far as was in my power—for I am a poor erring mortal, alas!

Manders There, there, my dear Engstrand—

Engstrand Yes, I do make bold to say that I brought up the child, and made my poor Joanna a loving and careful husband, as the Bible says we ought. But it never occurred to me to go to your reverence and claim credit for it or boast about it because I had done one good deed in this world. No, when Jacob Engstrand does a thing like that, he holds his tongue about it. Unfortunately it doesn't often happen, I know that only too well. And whenever I do come to see your reverence, I never seem to have anything but trouble and wickedness to talk about. Because, as I said just now—and I say it again—conscience can be very hard on us sometimes.

Manders Give me your hand, Jacob Engstrand.

Engstrand Oh, sir, I don't like—

Manders No nonsense (*Grasps his hand*) That's it!

Engstrand And may I make bold humbly to beg your reverence's pardon—

Manders You? On the contrary it is for me to beg your pardon—

Engstrand Oh no, sir.

Manders Yes, certainly it is, and I do it with my whole heart. Forgive me for having so much misjudged you. And I assure you that if I can do anything for you to prove my sincere regret and my goodwill towards you—

Engstrand Do you mean it, sir?

Manders It would give me the greatest pleasure.

Engstrand As a matter of fact, sir, you could do it now. I am thinking of using the honest money I have put away out of my wages up here, in establishing a sort of Sailors' Home in the town.

Mrs Alving You?

Engstrand Yes, to be a sort of Refuge, as it were. There are such manifold temptations lying in wait for

sailor men when they are roaming about on shore But my idea is that in this house of mine they should have a sort of parental care looking after them.

Manders What do you say to that, Mrs. Alving!

Engstrand I haven't much to begin such a work with, I know, but Heaven might prosper it, and if I found any helping hand stretched out to me, then—

Manders Quite so, we will talk over the matter further Your project attracts me enormously. But in the meantime go back to the Orphanage and put everything tidy and light the lights, so that the occasion may seem a little solemn And then we will spend a little edifying time together, my dear Engstrand, for now I am sure you are in a suitable frame of mind.

Engstrand. I believe I am, sir, truly Good-bye, then, Mrs Alving, and thank you for all your kindness, and take good care of Regina for me (*Wipes a tear from his eye*) Poor Joanna's child—it is an extraordinary thing, but she seems to have grown into my life and to hold me by the heartstrings. That's how I feel about it, truly. (*Bows, and goes out*)

Manders Now then, what do you think of him, Mrs Alving! That was quite another explanation that he gave us.

Mrs Alving It was, indeed

Manders There, you see how exceedingly careful we ought to be in condemning our fellow-men But at the same time it gives one genuine pleasure to find that one was mistaken Don't you think so?

Mrs Alving What I think is that you are, and always will remain, a big baby, Mr Manders

Manders I?

Mrs Alving (*laying her hands on his shoulders*). And I think that I should like very much to give you a good hug.

Manders (*drawing back hastily*). No, no, good gracious! What an idea!

Mrs. Alving (*with a smile*) Oh, you needn't be afraid of me

Manders (standing by the table) You choose such an extravagant way of expressing yourself sometimes Now I must get these papers together and put them in my bag (*Does so*) That's it And now good-bye, for the present Keep your eyes open when Oswald comes back I will come back and see you again presently

(He takes his hat and goes out by the hall door MRS ALVING sighs, glances out of the window, puts one or two things tidy in the room and turns to go into the dining-room She stops in the doorway with a stifled cry)

Mrs Alving Oswald, are you still sitting at table!

Oswald (from the dining-room) I am only finishing my cigar

Mrs Alving I thought you had gone out for a little turn.

Oswald (from within the room) In weather like this? (*A glass is heard clinking MRS ALVING leaves the door open and sits down with her knitting on the couch by the window*) Wasn't that Mr Manders that went out just now?

Mrs Alving Yes, he has gone over to the Orphanage.

Oswald Oh (*The clink of a bottle on a glass is heard again*)

Mrs Alving (with an uneasy expression) Oswald, dear, you should be careful with that liqueur It is strong

Oswald It's a good protective against the damp.

Mrs Alving Wouldn't you rather come in here?

Oswald You know you don't like smoking in there

Mrs Alving You may smoke a cigar in here, certainly.

Oswald All right, I will come in, then Just one drop more There! (*Comes in, smoking a cigar, and shuts the door after him. A short silence*) Where has the parson gone?

Mrs Alving I told you he had gone over to the Orphanage

Oswald Oh, so you did

Mrs Alving You shouldn't sit so long at table,
Oswald

Oswald (holding his cigar behind his back) But it's so nice and cosy, mother dear (*Caresses her with one hand*) Think what it means to me—to have come home, to sit at my mother's own table, in my mother's own room, and to enjoy the charming meals she gives me

Mrs Alving My dear, dear boy!

Oswald (a little impatiently, as he walks up and down smoking) And what else is there for me to do here? I have no occupation—

Mrs Alving No occupation?

Oswald Not in this ghastly weather, when there isn't a blink of sunshine all day long (*Walks up and down the floor*) Not to be able to work, it's—!

Mrs Alving I don't believe you were wise to come home.

Oswald Yes, mother, I had to

Mrs Alving Because I would ten times rather give up the happiness of having you with me, sooner than that you should—

Oswald (standing still by the table) Tell me, mother—is it really such a great happiness for you to have me at home?

Mrs Alving Can you ask?

Oswald (crumpling up a newspaper) I should have thought it would have been pretty much the same to you whether I were here or away

Mrs Alving Have you the heart to say that to your mother, Oswald?

Oswald But you have been quite happy living without me so far

Mrs Alving Yes, I have lived without you—that is true

(*A silence The dusk falls by degrees OSWALD walks restlessly up and down He has laid aside his cigar*)

Oswald (stopping beside MRS ALVING) Mother, may I sit on the couch beside you?

Mrs Alving Of course, my dear boy

Oswald (sitting down). Now I must tell you something mother.

Mrs. Alving (anxiously). What?

Oswald (staring in front of him) I can't bear it any longer.

Mrs. Alving Bear what? What do you mean?

Oswald (as before) I couldn't bring myself to write to you about it; and since I have been at home—

Mrs. Alving (catching him by the arm) *Oswald*, what is it?

Oswald. Both yesterday and to-day I have tried to push my thoughts away from me—to free myself from them. But I can't.

Mrs. Alving (getting up) You must speak plainly, *Oswald*!

Oswald (drawing her down to her seat again) Sit still, and I will try and tell you I have made a great deal of the fatigue I felt after my journey—

Mrs. Alving. Well, what of that?

Oswald But that isn't what is the matter. It is no ordinary fatigue—

Mrs. Alving (trying to get up). You are not ill, *Oswald*!

Oswald (pulling her down again) Sit still, mother Do take it quietly. I am not exactly ill—not ill in the usual sense (Takes his head in his hands) Mother, it's my mind that has broken down—gone to pieces—I shall never be able to work any more! (Buries his face in his hands and throws himself at her knees in an outburst of sobs)

Mrs. Alving (pale and trembling) *Oswald*! Look at me! No, no, it isn't true!

Oswald (looking up with a distracted expression). Never to be able to work any more! Never—never! A living death! Mother, can you imagine anything so horrible!

Mrs. Alving My poor unhappy boy? How has this terrible thing happened?

Oswald (sitting up again) That is just what I cannot possibly understand. I have never lived recklessly, in any sense. You must believe that of me, mother! I have never done that.

Mrs Alving I haven't a doubt of it, Oswald

Oswald And yet this comes upon me all the same!—this terrible disaster!

Mrs Alving Oh, but it will all come right again, my dear precious boy It is nothing but overwork Believe me, that is so

Oswald (dully) I thought so too, at first, but it isn't so

Mrs Alving Tell me all about it

Oswald Yes, I will

Mrs Alving When did you first feel anything?

Oswald It was just after I had been home last time and had got back to Paris I began to feel the most violent pains in my head—mostly at the back, I think It was as if a tight band of iron was pressing on me from my neck upwards

Mrs Alving And then?

Oswald At first I thought it was nothing but the head aches I always used to be so much troubled with while I was growing.

Mrs Alving. Yes, yes—

Oswald But it wasn't; I soon saw that I couldn't work any longer I would try and start some big new picture, but it seemed as if all my faculties had forsaken me, as if all my strength were paralysed I couldn't manage to collect my thoughts, my head seemed to swim—everything went round and round It was a horrible feeling! At last I sent for a doctor—and from him I learnt the truth

Mrs Alving In what way, do you mean?

Oswald He was one of the best doctors there He made me describe what I felt, and then he began to ask me a whole heap of questions which seemed to me to have nothing to do with the matter I couldn't see what he was driving at—

Mrs Alving Well?

Oswald At last he said "You have had the canker of disease in you practically from your birth"—the actual word he used was "*vermoulu*"

Mrs Alving (anxiously) What did he mean by that?

Oswald I couldn't understand, either—and I asked him for a clearer explanation, And then the old cynic said—(*clenching his fist*) Oh!—

Mrs Alving What did he say?

Oswald He said “The sins of the fathers are visited on the children”

Mrs Alving (getting up slowly) The sins of the fathers—!

Oswald I nearly struck him in the face—

Mrs Alving (walking across the room) The sins of the fathers—!

Oswald (smiling sadly) Yes, just imagine! Naturally I assured him that what he thought was impossible. But do you think he paid any heed to me? No, he persisted in his opinion, and it was only when I got out your letters and translated to him all the passages that referred to my father—

Mrs Alving Well, and then?

Oswald Well, then of course he had to admit that he was on the wrong tack, and then I learnt the truth—the incomprehensible truth! I ought to have had nothing to do with the joyous happy life I had lived with my comrades. It had been too much for my strength. So it was my own fault!

Mrs Alving No, no, Oswald! Don't believe that!

Oswald There was no other explanation of it possible, he said. That is the most horrible part of it. My whole life incurably ruined—just because of my own imprudence. All that I wanted to do in the world—not to dare to think of it any more—not to be able to think of it! Oh! if only I could live my life over again—if only I could undo what I have done! (*Throws himself on his face on the couch* *MRS ALVING wrings her hands, and walks up and down silently fighting with herself*)

Oswald (looks up after a while, raising himself on his elbows) If only it had been something I had inherited—something I could not help. But, instead of that, to have disgracefully, stupidly, thoughtlessly thrown away

one's happiness, one's health, everything in the world—
one's future, one's life—

Mrs Alving No, no, my darling boy, that is impossible! (*Bending over him*) Things are not so desperate as you think

Oswald Ah, you don't know— (*Springs up*) And to think, mother, that I should bring all this sorrow upon you! Many a time I have almost wished and hoped that you really did not care so very much for me

Mrs Alving I, Oswald? My only son! All that I have in the world! The only thing I care about!

Oswald (*taking hold of her hands and kissing them*) Yes, yes, I know that is so When I am at home I know that is true And that is one of the hardest parts of it to me But now you know all about it, and now we won't talk any more about it to-day I can't stand thinking about it long at a time (*Walks across the room*) Let me have something to drink, mother!

Mrs Alving To drink? What do you want?

Oswald Oh, anything you like I suppose you have got some punch in the house

Mrs Alving Yes, but my dear Oswald—!

Oswald Don't tell me I mustn't, mother. Do be nice! I must have something to drown these gnawing thoughts (*Goes into the conservatory*) And how—how gloomy it is here! (*MRS ALVING rings the bell*) And this incessant rain It may go on week after week—a whole month Never a ray of sunshine I don't remember ever having seen the sun shine once when I have been at home

Mrs Alving Oswald—you are thinking of going away from me!

Oswald Hm!—(*sighs deeply*) I am not thinking about anything I can't think about anything! (*In a low voice*) I have to let that alone

Regina (*coming from the dining-room*) Did you ring, ma'am?

Mrs Alving Yes, let us have the lamp in,

Regina In a moment, ma'am, it is all ready lit.
(*Goes out*)

Mrs Alving (*going up to OSWALD*) Oswald, don't keep anything back from me

Oswald I don't, mother (*Goes to the table*) It seems to me I have told you a good lot

(*REGINA brings the lamp and puts it upon the table*)

Mrs Alving Regina, you might bring us a small bottle of champagne

Regina Yes, ma'am (*Goes out*)

Oswald (*taking hold of his mother's face*) That's right. I knew my mother wouldn't let her son go thirsty

Mrs. Alving My poor dear boy, how could I refuse you anything now?

Oswald (*eagerly*) Is that true, mother? Do you mean it?

Mrs Alving Mean what?

Oswald That you couldn't deny me anything?

Mrs Alving My dear Oswald—

Oswald Hush!

(*REGINA brings in a tray with a small bottle of champagne and two glasses, which she puts on the table*)

Regina Shall I open the bottle?

Oswald No, thank you, I will do it,

(*REGINA goes out*)

Mrs. Alving (*sitting down at the table*) What did you mean, when you asked if I could refuse you nothing?

Oswald (*busy opening the bottle*) Let us have a glass first—or two

(*He draws the cork, fills one glass and is going to fill the other.*)

Mrs Alving (*holding her hand over the second glass*) No, thanks—not for me

Oswald Oh, well, for me then! (*He empties his glass, fills it again and empties it, then sits down at the table*)

Mrs Alving (*expectantly*) Now, tell me

Oswald (*without looking at her*) Tell me this, I thought you and Mr Manders seemed so strange—so quiet—at dinner,

Mrs. Alving. Did you notice that?

Oswald. Yes. Ahem! (*After a short pause*) Tell me—what do you think of Regina?

Mrs. Alving. What do I think of her?

Oswald. Yes, isn't she splendid!

Mrs. Alving. Dear Oswald, you don't know her as well as I do—

Oswald. What of that?

Mrs. Alving. Regina was too long at home, unfortunately. I ought to have taken her under my charge sooner.

Oswald. Yes, but isn't she splendid to look at, mother? (*Fills his glass*)

Mrs. Alving. Regina has many serious faults—

Oswald. Yes, but what of that? (*Drinks*)

Mrs. Alving. But I am fond of her, all the same, and I have made myself responsible for her. I wouldn't for the world she should come to any harm.

Oswald (*jumping up*) Mother, Regina is my only hope of salvation!

Mrs. Alving (*getting up*) What do you mean?

Oswald. I can't go on bearing all this agony of mind alone.

Mrs. Alving. Haven't you your mother to help you to bear it?

Oswald. Yes, I thought so, that was why I came home to you. But it is no use, I see that it isn't. I cannot spend my life here.

Mrs. Alving. Oswald!

Oswald. I must live a different sort of life, mother; so I shall have to go away from you. I don't want you watching it.

Mrs. Alving. My unhappy boy! But, Oswald, as long as you are ill like this—

Oswald. If it was only a matter of feeling ill, I would stay with you, mother. You are the best friend I have in the world.

Mrs. Alving. Yes, I am that, Oswald, am I not?

Oswald (*walking restlessly about*) But all this torment

—the regret, the remorse—and the deadly fear. Oh—this horrible fear!

Mrs Alving (*following him*) Fear? Fear of what? What do you mean?

Oswald Oh, don't ask me any more about it. I don't know what it is. I can't put it into words. (*Mrs ALVING crosses the room and rings the bell*) What do you want?

Mrs Alving I want my boy to be happy, that's what I want. He mustn't brood over anything. (*To REGINA, who has come to the door.*) More champagne—a large bottle.

Oswald Mother!

Mrs Alving Do you think we country people don't know how to live?

Oswald Isn't she splendid to look at? What a figure! And the picture of health!

Mrs Alving (*sitting down at the table*). Sit down, Oswald, and let us have a quiet talk.

Oswald (*sitting down*) You don't know, mother, that I owe Regina a little reparation.

Mrs Alving You!

Oswald Oh, it was only a little thoughtlessness—call it what you like. Something quite innocent, anyway. The last time I was home—

Mrs Alving Yes?

Oswald —she used often to ask me questions about Paris, and I told her one thing and another about the life there. And I remember saying one day “Wouldn't you like to go there yourself?”

Mrs Alving Well?

Oswald I saw her blush, and she said. “Yes, I should like to very much.” “All right,” I said, “I daresay it might be managed”—or something of that sort.

Mrs Alving And then?

Oswald I naturally had forgotten all about it, but the day before yesterday I happened to ask her if she was glad I was to be so long at home—

Mrs Alving Well?

Oswald. —and she looked so queerly at me, and asked: “But what is to become of my trip to Paris?”

Mrs Alving Her trip!

Oswald And then I got it out of her that she had taken the thing seriously, and had been thinking about me all the time, and had set herself to learn French—

Mrs. Alving So that was why—

Oswald Mother—when I saw this fine, splendid, handsome girl standing there in front of me—I had never paid any attention to her before then—but now, when she stood there as if with open arms ready for me to take her to myself—

Mrs Alving Oswald!

Oswald —then I realised that my salvation lay in her, for I saw the joy of life in her

Mrs Alving (*starting back*) The joy of life—? Is there salvation in that?

Regina (*coming in from the dining-room with a bottle of champagne*) Excuse me for being so long, but I had to go to the cellar (*Puts the bottle down on the table*)

Oswald Bring another glass, too

Regina (*looking at him in astonishment*) The mistress's glass is there, sir

Oswald Yes, but fetch one for yourself, Regina, (*REGINA starts, and gives a quick shy glance at MRS. ALVING*) Well?

Regina (*in a low and hesitating voice*) Do you wish me to, ma'am?

Mrs Alving Fetch the glass, Regina (*REGINA goes into the dining-room*)

Oswald (*looking after her*) Have you noticed how well she walks?—so firmly and confidently!

Mrs Alving It cannot be, Oswald

Oswald It is settled You must see that It is no use forbidding it (*REGINA comes in with a glass, which she holds in her hand*) Sit down, Regina (*REGINA looks questioningly at MRS ALVING*)

Mrs Alving Sit down (*REGINA sits down on a chair*)

near the dining-room door, still holding the glass in her hand) Oswald, what was it you were saying about the joy of life?

Oswald. Ah, mother—the joy of life! You don't know very much about that at home here. I shall never realise it here.

Mrs Alving. Not even when you are with me?

Oswald. Never at home. But you can't understand that

Mrs Alving. Yes, indeed I almost think I do understand you—now

Oswald. That—and the joy of work. They are really the same thing at bottom. But you don't know anything about that either.

Mrs Alving. Perhaps you are right. Tell me some more about it, Oswald

Oswald. Well, all I mean is that here people are brought up to believe that work is a curse and a punishment for sin, and that life is a state of wretchedness and that the sooner we can get out of it the better.

Mrs Alving. A vale of tears, yes. And we quite conscientiously make it so

Oswald. But the people over there will have none of that. There is no one there who really believes doctrines of that kind any longer. Over there the mere fact of being alive is thought to be a matter for exultant happiness. Mother, have you noticed that everything I have painted has turned upon the joy of life?—always upon the joy of life, unfailingly. There is light there, and sunshine, and a holiday feeling—and people's faces beaming with happiness. That is why I am afraid to stay at home here with you.

Mrs Alving. Afraid? What are you afraid of here, with me?

Oswald. I am afraid that all these feelings that are so strong in me would degenerate into something ugly here

Mrs Alving (looking steadily at him). Do you think that is what would happen?

Oswald I am certain it would Even if one lived the same life at home here, as over there—it would never really be the same life.

Mrs Alving (*who has listened anxiously to him, gets up with a thoughtful expression and says*) Now I see clearly how it all happened

Oswald What do you see?

Mrs Alving I see it now for the first time. And now I can speak

Oswald (*getting up*) Mother, I don't understand you.

Regina (*who has got up also*) Perhaps I had better go.

Mrs Alving No, stay here Now I can speak Now, my son, you shall know the whole truth *Oswald!* *Regina!*

Oswald Hush!—here is the parson—

(*MANDERS comes in by the hall door*)

Manders Well, my friends, we have been spending an edifying time over there

Oswald So have we

Manders. Engstrand must have help with his Sailors' Home *Regina* must go home with him and give him her assistance,

Regina No, thank you, Mr Manders

Manders (*perceiving her for the first time*) What—? You in here?—and with a wineglass in your hand!

Regina (*putting down the glass hastily*) I beg your pardon—!

Oswald *Regina* is going away with me, Mr Manders.

Manders Going away! With you!

Oswald Yes, as my wife—if she insists on that.

Manders But, good heavens—!

Regina It is not my fault, Mr Manders

Oswald Or else she stays here if I stay.

Regina (*involuntarily*) Here!

Manders I am amazed at you, Mrs Alving.

Mrs Alving Neither of those things will happen, for now I can speak openly

Manders But you won't do that! No, no, no!

Mrs Alving Yes, I can and I will And without destroying any one's ideals.

Oswald Mother, what is it that is being concealed from me?

Regina (*listening*) Mrs. Alving! Listen! They are shouting outside

(*Goes into the conservatory and looks out*)

Oswald (*going to the window on the left*) What can be the matter? Where does that glare come from?

Regina (*calls out*) The Orphanage is on fire!

Mrs Alving (*going to the window*) On fire?

Manders On fire? Impossible. I was there just a moment ago

Oswald Where is my hat? Oh, never mind that, Father's Orphanage—!

(*Runs out through the garden door*)

Mrs Alving My shawl, Regina! The whole place is in flames

Manders How terrible! Mrs Alving, that fire is a judgment on this house of sin!

Mrs Alving Quite so Come, Regina

(*She and REGINA hurry out*)

Manders (*clasping his hands*) And no insurance!

(*Follows them out*)

ACT III

(*The same scene All the doors are standing open. The lamp is still burning on the table It is dark outside, except for a faint glimmer of light seen through the windows at the back MRS ALVING, with a shawl over her head, is standing in the conservatory, looking out REGINA, also wrapped in a shawl, is standing a little behind her*)

Mrs Alving Everything burnt—down to the ground

Regina It is burning still in the basement.

Mrs Alving I can't think why Oswald doesn't come back There is no chance of saving anything

Regina Shall I go and take his hat to him?

Mrs Alving Hasn't he even got his hat?

Regina (pointing to the hall) No, there it is, hanging up

Mrs Alving. Never mind. He is sure to come back soon. I will go and see what he is doing. (*Goes out by the garden door.* *MANDERS comes in from the hall*)

Manders Isn't Mrs Alving here?

Regina. She has just this moment gone down into the garden.

Manders I have never spent such a terrible night in my life

Regina Isn't it a shocking misfortune, sir!

Manders Oh, don't speak about it. I scarcely dare to think about it.

Regina But how can it have happened?

Manders Don't ask me, Miss Engstrand! How should I know? Are you going to suggest too—? Isn't it enough that your father—?

Regina What has he done?

Manders He has nearly driven me crazy

Engstrand (coming in from the hall) Mr Manders—!

Manders (turning round with a start) Have you even followed me here!

Engstrand Yes, God help us all—! Great heavens! What a dreadful thing, your reverence!

Manders (walking up and down) Oh dear, oh dear!

Regina What do you mean?

Engstrand Our little prayer-meeting was the cause of it all, don't you see? (*Aside, to REGINA*) Now we've got the old fool, my girl (*Aloud*) And to think it is my fault that Mr Manders should be the cause of such a thing!

Manders I assure you, Engstrand—

Engstrand But there was no one else carrying a light there except you, sir

Manders (standing still) Yes, so you say. But I have no clear recollection of having had a light in my hand

Engstrand But I saw quite distinctly your reverence

take a candle and snuff it with your fingers and throw away the burning bit of wick among the shavings

Manders Did you see that?

Engstrand Yes, distinctly.

Manders. I can't understand it at all It is never my habit to snuff a candle with my fingers

Engstrand Yes, it wasn't like you to do that, sir But who would have thought it could be such a dangerous thing to do?

Manders (*walking resolutely backwards and forwards*). Oh, don't ask me!

Engstrand (*following him about*) And you hadn't insured it either, had you, sir?

Manders No, no, no, you heard me say so

Engstrand You hadn't insured it—and then went and set light to the whole place! Good Lord, what bad luck!

Manders (*wiping the perspiration from his forehead*). You may well say so, Engstrand

Engstrand And that it should happen to a charitable institution that would have been of service both to the town and the country, so to speak! The newspapers won't be very kind to your reverence, I expect.

Manders No, that is just what I am thinking of. It is almost the worst part of the whole thing The spiteful attacks and accusations—it is horrible to think of!

Mrs Alving (*coming in from the garden*) I can't get him away from the fire

Manders Oh, there you are, Mrs Alving

Mrs Alving You will escape having to make your inaugural address now, at all events, Mr Manders

Manders Oh, I would so gladly have—

Mrs Alving (*in a dull voice*) It is just as well it has happened This Orphanage would never have come to any good.

Manders Don't you think so?

Mrs Alving Do you?

Manders But it is none the less an extraordinary piece of ill luck.

Mrs Alving We will discuss it simply as a business matter—Are you waiting for Mr Manders, Engstrand?

Engstrand (at the hall door) Yes, I am

Mrs Alving Sit down then, while you are waiting

Engstrand Thank you, I would rather stand

Mrs Alving (to MANDERS) I suppose you are going by the boat?

Manders Yes It goes in about an hour.

Mrs. Alving Please take all the documents back with you I don't want to hear another word about the matter I have something else to think about now—

Manders Mrs Alving—

Mrs. Alving Later on I will send you a power of attorney to deal with it exactly as you please

Manders I shall be most happy to undertake that. I am afraid the original intention of the bequest will have to be entirely altered now

Mrs Alving. Of course

Manders Provisionally, I should suggest this way of disposing of it. Make over the Solvik property to the parish The land is undoubtedly not, without a certain value, it will always be useful for some purpose or another And as for the interest on the remaining capital that is on deposit in the bank, possibly I might make suitable use of that in support of some undertaking that promises to be of use to the town

Mrs Alving Do exactly as you please The whole thing is a matter of indifference to me now

Engstrand You will think of my Sailors' Home, Mr. Manders?

Manders Yes, certainly, that is a suggestion But we must consider the matter carefully

Engstrand (aside) Consider!—devil take it! Oh Lord.

Manders (sighing) And unfortunately I can't tell how much longer I may have anything to do with the matter—whether public opinion may not force me to retire from it altogether That depends entirely upon the result of the enquiry into the cause of the fire,

Mrs. Alving. What do you say?

Manders. And one cannot in any way reckon upon the result beforehand.

Engstrand (*going nearer to him*). Yes, indeed one can; because here stand I, Jacob Engstrand.

Manders. Quite so, but—

Engstrand (*lowering his voice*). And Jacob Engstrand isn't the man to desert a worthy benefactor in the hour of need, as the saying is.

Manders. Yes, but, my dear fellow—how—?

Engstrand. You might say Jacob Engstrand is an angel of salvation, so to speak, your reverence.

Manders. No, no, I couldn't possibly accept that.

Engstrand. That's how it will be, all the same. I know some one who has taken the blame for some one else on his shoulders before now, I do.

Manders. Jacob! (*Grasps his hand.*) You are one in a thousand! You shall have assistance in the matter of your Sailors' Home, you may rely upon that.

(ENGSTRAND tries to thank him, but is prevented by emotion.)

Manders (*carrying his wallet over his shoulder*). Now we must be off. We will travel together.

Engstrand (*by the dining-room door, says aside to REGINA*). Come with me, you hussy! You shall be as easy as the yolk in an egg!

Regina (*tossing her head*). Maud!

(*She goes out into the hall and brings back MANDERS' luggage.*)

Manders. Good-bye, Mrs. Alving! And may the spirit of order and of what is laudable speedily enter into this house.

Mrs. Alving. Good-bye, Mr. Manders.

(*She goes into the conservatory, as she sees OSWALD coming in by the garden door.*)

Engstrand (*as he and REGINA are helping MANDERS on with his coat*). Good-bye, my child. And if anything should happen to you, you know where Jacob Engstrand is to be found. (*Lowering his voice.*) Little Harbour

Street, ahem—! (*To MRS ALVING and OSWALD.*) And my house for poor seafaring men shall be called the "Alving Home," it shall. And, if I can carry out my own ideas about it, I shall make bold to hope that it may be worthy of bearing the late Mr. Alving's name.

Manders (at the door) Ahem—ahem! Come along, my dear Engstrand. Good-bye—good-bye!

(*He and ENGSTRAND go out by the hall door*)

Oswald (going to the table) What house was he speaking about?

Mrs Alving I believe it is some sort of a Home that he and Mr. Manders want to start.

Oswald It will be burnt up just like this one.

Mrs Alving What makes you think that?

Oswald Everything will be burnt up, nothing will be left that is in memory of my father. Here am I being burnt up, too.

(*REGINA looks at him in alarm*)

Mrs Alving Oswald! You should not have stayed so long over there, my poor boy.

Oswald (sitting down at the table) I almost believe you are right.

Mrs. Alving Let me dry your face, Oswald, you are all wet. (*Wipes his face with her handkerchief*)

Oswald (looking straight before him, with no expression in his eyes) Thank you, mother.

Mrs Alving And aren't you tired, Oswald? Don't you want to go to sleep?

Oswald (uneasily) No, no—not to sleep! I never sleep, I only pretend to. (*Gloomily*) That will come soon enough.

Mrs Alving (looking at him anxiously) Anyhow you are really ill, my darling boy.

Regina (intently) Is Mr. Alving ill?

Oswald (impatiently) And do shut all the doors! This deadly fear—

Mrs Alving Shut the doors, Regina. (*REGINA shuts the doors and remains standing by the hall door.* *MRS. ALVING takes off her shawl, REGINA does the same, MRS.*

ALVING *draws up a chair near to OSWALD's and sits down beside him*) That's it! Now I will sit beside you—

Oswald Yes, do And Regina must stay in here too, Regina must always be near me. You must give me a helping hand, you know, Regina. Won't you do that?

Regina I don't understand—

Mrs Alving A helping hand?

Oswald Yes—when there is need for it.

Mrs Alving Oswald, have you not your mother to give you a helping hand?

Oswald You? (*Smiles*) No, mother, you will never give me the kind of helping hand I mean (*Laughs grimly*) You! Ha, ha! (*Looks gravely at her*) After all, you have the best right. (*Impetuously*) Why don't you call me by my Christian name, Regina? Why don't you say Oswald?

Regina (*in a low voice*) I did not think Mrs. Alving would like it.

Mrs Alving It will not be long before you have the right to do it Sit down here now beside us, too (*REGINA sits down quietly and hesitatingly at the other side of the table*) And now, my poor tortured boy, I am going to take the burden off your mind—

Oswald You, mother?

Mrs Alving —all that you call remorse and regret and self-reproach

Oswald And you think you can do that?

Mrs Alving Yes, now I can, Oswald A little while ago you were talking about the joy of life, and what you said seemed to shed a new light upon everything in my whole life.

Oswald (*shaking his head*) I don't in the least understand what you mean

Mrs Alving You should have known your father in his young days in the army He was full of the joy of life, I can tell you

Oswald Yes, I know.

Mrs Alving It gave me a holiday feeling only to look at him, full of irrepressible energy and exuberant spirits,

Oswald What then?

Mrs Alving. Well, then this boy, full of the joy of life—for he was just like a boy, then—had to make his home in a second-rate town which had none of the joy of life to offer him, but only dissipations. He had to come out here and live an aimless life, he had only an official post. He had no work worth devoting his whole mind to, he had nothing more than official routine to attend to. He had not a single companion capable of appreciating what the joy of life meant, nothing but idlers and tipplers—

Oswald Mother—I

Mrs Alving And so the inevitable happened!

Oswald What was the inevitable?

Mrs Alving You said yourself this evening what would happen in your case if you stayed at home

Oswald Do you mean by that, that father—?

Mrs. Alving Your poor father never found any outlet for the overmastering joy of life that was in him. And I brought no holiday spirit into his home, either.

Oswald You didn't, either?

Mrs Alving. I had been taught about duty, and the sort of thing that I believed in so long here. Everything seemed to turn upon duty—my duty, or his duty—and I am afraid I made your poor father's home unbearable to him, Oswald.

Oswald Why did you never say anything about it to me in your letters?

Mrs. Alving I never looked at it as a thing I could speak of to you, who were his son

Oswald What way did you look at it, then?

Mrs Alving I only saw the one fact, that your father was a lost man before ever you were born

Oswald (in a choking voice) Ah—I (*He gets up and goes to the window*)

Mrs. Alving And then I had the one thought in my mind, day and night, that Regina in fact had as good a right in this house—as my own boy had

Oswald (turns round suddenly). Regina—?

Regina (gets up and asks in choking tones). I—?

Mrs Alving Yes, now you both know it,

Oswald Regina!

Regina (to herself). So mother was one of that sort too

Mrs. Alving. Your mother had many good qualities, Regina

Regina Yes, but she was one of that sort too, all the same. I have even thought so myself, sometimes, but— Then, if you please, Mrs Alving, may I have permission to leave at once?

Mrs Alving. Do you really wish to, Regina?

Regina Yes, indeed, I certainly wish to

Mrs Alving Of course you shall do as you like, but—

Oswald (going up to REGINA) Leave now? This is your home

Regina Merci, Mr Alving—oh, of course I may say Oswald now, but that is not the way I thought it would become allowable.

Mrs Alving Regina, I have not been open with you—

Regina No, I can't say you have! If I had known Oswald was ill— And now that there can never be anything serious between us— No, I really can't stay here in the country and wear myself out looking after invalids.

Oswald Not even for the sake of one who has so near a claim on you?

Regina No, indeed I can't A poor girl must make some use of her youth, otherwise she may easily find herself out in the cold before she knows where she is. And I have got the joy of life in me too, Mrs Alving!

Mrs Alving Yes, unfortunately; but don't throw yourself away, Regina

Regina Oh, what's going to happen will happen. If Oswald takes after his father, it is just as likely I take after my mother, I expect—May I ask, Mrs. Alving, whether Mr Manders knows this about me?

Mrs Alving Mr Manders knows everything

Regina (putting on her shawl). Oh, well then, the best

thing I can do is to get away by the boat as soon as I can. Mr. Manders is such a nice gentleman to deal with, and it certainly seems to me that I have just as much right to some of that money as he—as that horrid carpenter.

Mrs. Alving You are quite welcome to it, Regina

Regina (looking at her fixedly) You might as well have brought me up like a gentleman's daughter, it would have been more suitable. *(Tosses her head)* Oh, well—never mind! *(With a bitter glance at the unopened bottle)* I daresay some day I shall be drinking champagne with gentlefolk, after all

Mrs. Alving If ever you need a home, Regina, come to me

Regina No, thank you, Mrs. Alving. Mr. Manders takes an interest in me, I know. And if things should go very badly with me, I know one house at any rate where I shall feel at home

Mrs. Alving Where is that?

Regina In the "Alving Home"

Mrs. Alving Regina—I can see quite well—you are going to your ruin!

Regina Pooh!—good-bye

(She bows to them and goes out through the hall)

Oswald (standing by the window and looking out) Has she gone?

Mrs. Alving Yes.

Oswald (muttering to himself) I think it's all wrong

Mrs. Alving (going up to him from behind and putting her hands on his shoulders) Oswald, my dear boy—has it been a great shock to you?

Oswald (turning his face towards her) All this about father, do you mean?

Mrs. Alving Yes, about your unhappy father. I am so afraid it may have been too much for you

Oswald What makes you think that? Naturally it has taken me entirely by surprise, but, after all, I don't know that it matters much to me

Mrs. Alving (drawing back her hands) Doesn't matter! —that your father's life was such a terrible failure!

Oswald Of course I can feel sympathy for him, just as I would for anyone else, but—

Mrs. Alving No more than that! For your own father!

Oswald (*impatiently*). Father—father! I never knew anything of my father. I don't remember anything else about him except that he once made me sick.

Mrs. Alving It is dreadful to think of!—But surely a child should feel some affection for his father, whatever happens?

Oswald When the child has nothing to thank his father for? When he has never known him? Do you really cling to that ridiculous superstition—you, who are so broad-minded in other things?

Mrs. Alving You call it nothing but a superstition!

Oswald Yes, and you can see that for yourself quite well, mother. There are more beliefs that are put into circulation in the world and—

Mrs. Alving Ghosts and devils!

Oswald (*travelling*). Yes, you might call them ghosts.

Mrs. Alving (*travelling*). Oswald—then you don't believe in them?

Oswald Yes—but is that all?

Mrs. Alving Yes, and you are of me and I

Oswald Yes, and you are of me and I

Mrs. Alving Yes, and you are of me and I

Oswald Yes, and you are of me and I

Mrs. Alving Yes, and you are of me and I

Oswald Yes, and you are of me and I

Mrs. Alving Yes, and you are of me and I

Oswald Yes, and you are of me and I

Mrs. Alving Yes, and you are of me and I

Oswald Yes, and you are of me and I

Mrs. Alving Yes, and you are of me and I

Oswald Yes, and you are of me and I

Mrs. Alving Yes, and you are of me and I

Oswald Yes, and you are of me and I

Mrs. Alving Yes, and you are of me and I

(*Goes up to him*) Now have I taken away all your remorse and self-reproach?

Oswald Yes, you have done that But who will take away the fear?

Mrs Alving The fear?

Oswald (*crossing the room*) Regina would have done it for one kind word

Mrs Alving. I don't understand you What fear do you mean—and what has Regina to do with it?

Oswald Is it very late, mother?

Mrs Alving It is early morning (*Looks out through the conservatory windows*) The dawn is breaking already on the heights And the sky is clear, Oswald In a little while you will see the sun.

Oswald I am glad of that. After all, there may be many things yet for me to be glad of and to live for—

Mrs. Alving I should hope so!

Oswald Even if I am not able to work—

Mrs Alving You will soon find you are able to work again now, my dear boy You have no longer all those painful depressing thoughts to brood over

Oswald No, it is a good thing that you have been able to rid me of those fancies. If only, now, I could overcome this one thing— (*Sits down on the couch*) Let us have a little chat, mother

Mrs Alving Yes, let us (*Pushes an armchair near to the couch and sits down beside him*)

Oswald The sun is rising—and you know all about it, so I don't feel the fear any longer

Mrs Alving I know all about what?

Oswald (*without listening to her*) Mother, isn't it the case that you said this evening there was nothing in the world you would not do for me if I asked you?

Mrs Alving Yes, certainly I said so

Oswald. And will you be as good as your word, mother?

Mrs Alving You may rely upon that, my own dear boy I have nothing else to live for, but you

Oswald. Yes, yes, well, listen to me, mother. You

are very strong-minded, I know I want you to sit quite quiet when you hear what I am going to tell you,

Mrs Alving But what is this dreadful thing—?

Oswald You mustn't scream Do you hear? Will you promise me that? We are going to sit and talk it over quite quietly Will you promise me that, mother?

Mrs. Alving Yes, yes, I promise—only tell me what it is

Oswald Well, then, you must know that this fatigue of mine—and my not being able to think about my work—all that is not really the illness itself—

Mrs Alving What is the illness itself?

Oswald What I am suffering from is hereditary; it—*(touches his forehead, and speaks very quietly)*—it lies here

Mrs. Alving (almost speechless) Oswald! No—no!

Oswald Don't scream, I can't stand it Yes, I tell you, it lies here, waiting. And any time, any moment, it may break out.

Mrs. Alving How horrible—!

Oswald Do keep quiet. That is the state I am in—

Mrs. Alving (springing up) It isn't true, Oswald! It is impossible! It can't be that!

Oswald I had one attack while I was abroad It passed off quickly But when I learnt the condition I had been in, then this dreadful haunting fear took possession of me.

Mrs Alving. That was the fear, then—

Oswald. Yes, it is so indescribably horrible, you know. If only it had been an ordinary mortal disease— I am not so much afraid of dying, though, of course, I should like to live as long as I can

Mrs Alving Yes, yes, Oswald, you must!

Oswald But this is so appallingly horrible. To become like a helpless child again—to have to be fed, to have to be— Oh, it's unspeakable!

Mrs Alving My child has his mother to tend him.

Oswald (jumping up) No, never, that is just what I won't endure! I dare not think what it would mean to

linger on like that for years—to get old and grey like that. And you might die before I did (*Sits down in MRS ALVING'S chair*) Because it doesn't necessarily have a fatal end quickly, the doctor said He called it a kind of softening of the brain—or something of that sort (*Smiles mournfully*) I think that expression sounds so nice. It always makes me think of cherry-coloured velvet curtains—something that is soft to stroke.

Mrs Alving (with a scream) Oswald!

Oswald (jumps up and walks about the room) And now you have taken Regina from me! If I had only had her. She would have given me a helping hand, I know

Mrs. Alving (going up to him) What do you mean, my darling boy? Is there any help in the world I would not be willing to give you?

Oswald. When I had recovered from the attack I had abroad, the doctor told me that when it recurred—and it will recur—there would be no more hope

Mrs Alving And he was heartless enough to—

Oswald. I insisted on knowing I told him I had arrangements to make— (*Smiles cunningly*) And so I had (*Takes a small box from his inner breast-pocket*) Mother, do you see this?

Mrs Alving What is it?

Oswald Morphia powders

Mrs. Alving (looking at him in terror) Oswald—my boy!

Oswald I have twelve of them saved up—

Mrs Alving (snatching at it) Give me the box, Oswald!

Oswald Not yet, mother (*Puts it back in his pocket*)

Mrs Alving I shall never get over this!

Oswald. You must. If I had had Regina here now, I would have told her quietly how things stand with me—and asked her to give me this last helping hand She would have helped me, I am certain.

Mrs. Alving Never!

Oswald If this horrible thing had come upon me and she had seen me lying helpless, like a baby, past help, past saving, past hope—with no chance of recovering—

Mrs Alving Never in the world would Regina have done it

Oswald Regina would have done it Regina was so splendidly light-hearted And she would very soon have tired of looking after an invalid like me

Mrs Alving Then thank heaven Regina is not here!

Oswald Well, now you have got to give me that helping hand, mother.

Mrs Alving (*with a loud scream*) I!

Oswald Who has a better right than you?

Mrs Alving I! Your mother!

Oswald Just for that reason.

Mrs Alving. I, who gave you your life!

Oswald I never asked you for life And what kind of a life was it that you gave me? I don't want it! You shall take it back!

Mrs Alving Help! Help! (*Runs into the hall*)

Oswald (*following her*) Don't leave me! Where are you going?

Mrs Alving (*in the hall*). To fetch the doctor to you, Oswald! Let me out!

Oswald (*going into the hall*). You shan't go out. And no one shall come in (*Turns the key in the lock*)

Mrs. Alving (*coming in again*) Oswald! Oswald!—my child!

Oswald (*following her*) Have you a mother's heart—and can bear to see me suffering this unspeakable terror?

Mrs Alving (*controlling herself, after a moment's silence*) There is my hand on it

Oswald Will you—?

Mrs Alving If it becomes necessary. But it shan't become necessary No, no—it is impossible it should!

Oswald Let us hope so And let us live together as long as we can Thank you, mother

(*He sits down in the armchair, which MRS ALVING had moved beside the couch Day is breaking, the lamp is still burning on the table*)

Mrs Alving (*coming cautiously nearer*) Do you feel calmer now?

Oswald Yes.

Mrs Alving (*bending over him*) It has only been a dreadful fancy of yours, Oswald Nothing but fancy. All this upset has been bad for you But now you will get some rest, at home with your own mother, my darling boy You shall have everything you want, just as you did when you were a little child—There, now The attack is over. You see how easily it passed off! I knew it would.—And look, Oswald, what a lovely day we are going to have? Brilliant sunshine Now you will be able to see your home properly (*She goes to the table and puts out the lamp. It is sunrise The glaciers and peaks in the distance are seen bathed in bright morning light*)

Oswald (*who has been sitting motionless in the armchair, with his back to the scene outside, suddenly says.*) Mother, give me the sun.

Mrs Alving (*standing at the table, and looking at him in amazement*) What do you say?

Oswald (*repeats in a dull, toneless voice*). The sun—the sun.

Mrs Alving (*going up to him*) Oswald, what is the matter with you? (OSWALD seems to shrink up in the chair, all his muscles relax, his face loses its expression, and his eyes stare stupidly. MRS ALVING is trembling with terror.) What is it! (*Screams.*) Oswald! What is the matter with you! (*Throws herself on her knees beside him and shakes him*) Oswald! Oswald! Look at me! Don't you know me!

Oswald (*in an expressionless voice, as before*) The sun—the sun.

Mrs Alving (*jumps up despairingly, beats her head with her hands, and screams*) I can't bear it! (*Whispers as though paralysed with fear*) I can't bear it! Never! (*Suddenly.*) Where has he got it? (*Passes her hand quickly over his coat.*) Here! (*Draws back a little way and cries*) No, no, no!—Yes!—no, no! (*She stands a few steps from him, her hands thrust into her hair, and stares at him in speechless terror*)

Oswald (*sitting motionless, as before*) The sun—the sun

AN ENEMY OF THE PEOPLE
A Play in Five Acts

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

Dr. Thomas Stockmann, Medical Officer of the Municipal Baths.

Mrs. Stockmann, his wife

Petra, their daughter, a teacher.

Ejlif } their sons (aged 13 and 10 respectively).
Morten }

Peter Stockmann, the Doctor's elder brother, Mayor of the
Town and Chief Constable, Chairman of the Baths' Com-
mittee, etc, etc

Morten Kull, a tanner (Mrs. Stockmann's adoptive father).

Hovstad, editor of the "People's Messenger."

Billing, sub editor

Captain Horster

Aslaksen, a printer

Men of various conditions and occupations, some few women,
and a troop of schoolboys—the audience at a public
meeting

The action takes place in a coast town in southern Norway

AN ENEMY OF THE PEOPLE

ACT I

(SCENE — DR STOCKMANN'S sitting-room. *It is evening. The room is plainly but neatly appointed and furnished. In the right-hand wall are two doors, the farther leads out to the hall, the nearer to the doctor's study. In the left-hand wall, opposite the door leading to the hall, is a door leading to the other rooms occupied by the family. In the middle of the same wall stands the stove, and, further forward, a couch with a looking-glass hanging over it and an oval table in front of it. On the table, a lighted lamp, with a lampshade. At the back of the room, an open door leads to the dining-room. BILLING is seen sitting at the dining table, on which a lamp is burning. He has a napkin tucked under his chin, and MRS STOCKMANN is standing by the table handing him a large plate-full of roast beef. The other places at the table are empty, and the table somewhat in disorder, a meal having evidently recently been finished*.)

Mrs. Stockmann You see, if you come an hour late, Mr Billing, you have to put up with cold meat.

Billing (as he eats) It is uncommonly good, thank you—remarkably good

Mrs. Stockmann My husband makes such a point of having his meals punctually, you know—

Billing That doesn't affect me a bit. Indeed, I almost think I enjoy a meal all the better when I can sit down and eat all by myself and undisturbed

Mrs Stockmann Oh well, as long as you are enjoying it— (*Turns to the hall door, listening*) I expect that is Mr Hovstad coming too.

Billing Very likely

(*PETER STOCKMANN comes in. He wears an overcoat and his official hat, and carries a stick*.)

Peter Stockmann Good evening, Katherine.

Mrs Stockmann (*coming forward into the sitting-room*). Ah, good evening—is it you? How good of you to come up and see us!

Peter Stockmann. I happened to be passing, and so—(*looks into the dining-room*). But you have company with you, I see.

Mrs Stockmann (*a little embarrassed*) Oh, no—it was quite by chance he came in (*Hurriedly*) Won't you come in and have something, too?

Peter Stockmann. H! No, thank you. Good gracious—hot meat at night! Not with my digestion.

Mrs Stockmann Oh, but just once in a way—

Peter Stockmann No, no, my dear lady, I stick to my tea and bread and butter. It is much more wholesome in the long run—and a little more economical, too.

Mrs. Stockmann (*smiling*) Now you mustn't think that Thomas and I are spendthrifts.

Peter Stockmann. Not you, my dear; I would never think that of you. (*Points to the Doctor's study*) Is he not at home?

Mrs. Stockmann. No, he went out for a little turn after supper—he and the boys.

Peter Stockmann. I doubt if that is a wise thing to do (*Listens*) I fancy I hear him coming now.

Mrs Stockmann No, I don't think it is he (*A knock is heard at the door.*) Come in! (*Hovstad comes in from the hall*) Oh, it is you, Mr Hovstad!

Hovstad Yes, I hope you will forgive me, but I was delayed at the printers. Good evening, Mr Mayor.

Peter Stockmann (*bowing a little distantly*) Good evening. You have come on business, no doubt.

Hovstad Partly. It's about an article for the paper.

Peter Stockmann. So I imagined. I hear my brother has become a prolific contributor to the "People's Messenger."

Hovstad Yes, he is good enough to write in the "People's Messenger" when he has any home truths to tell,

Mrs. Stockmann (to Hovstad). But won't you—? (Points to the dining-room)

Peter Stockmann Quite so, quite so. I don't blame him in the least, as a writer, for addressing himself to the quarters where he will find the readiest sympathy. And, besides that, I personally have no reason to bear any ill will to your paper, Mr. Hovstad.

Hovstad I quite agree with you.

Peter Stockmann Taking one thing with another, there is an excellent spirit of toleration in the town—an admirable municipal spirit. And it all springs from the fact of our having a great common interest to unite us—an interest that is in an equally high degree the concern of every right-minded citizen—

Hovstad The Baths, yes

Peter Stockmann Exactly—our fine, new, handsome Baths. Mark my words, Mr. Hovstad—the Baths will become the focus of our municipal life! Not a doubt of it!

Mrs. Stockmann. That is just what Thomas says.

Peter Stockmann Think how extraordinarily the place has developed within the last year or two! Money has been flowing in, and there is some life and some business doing in the town. Houses and landed property are rising in value every day.

Hovstad And unemployment is diminishing.

Peter Stockmann. Yes, that is another thing. The burden of the poor rates has been lightened, to the great relief of the propertied classes; and that relief will be even greater if only we get a really good summer this year, and lots of visitors—plenty of invalids, who will make the Baths talked about.

Hovstad. And there is a good prospect of that, I hear.

Peter Stockmann. It looks very promising. Enquiries about apartments and that sort of thing are reaching us every day.

Hovstad. Well, the doctor's article will come in very suitably.

Peter Stockmann Has he been writing something just lately?

Hovstad This is something he wrote in the winter, a recommendation of the Baths—an account of the excellent sanitary conditions here. But I held the article over, temporarily.

Peter Stockmann Ah,—some little difficulty about it, I suppose?

Hovstad No, not at all, I thought it would be better to wait till the spring, because it is just at this time that people begin to think seriously about their summer quarters.

Peter Stockmann Quite right, you were perfectly right, Mr Hovstad.

Hovstad Yes, Thomas is really indefatigable when it is a question of the Baths.

Peter Stockmann Well—remember, he is the Medical Officer to the Baths.

Hovstad Yes, and what is more, they owe their existence to him.

Peter Stockmann To him? Indeed! It is true I have heard from time to time that some people are of that opinion. At the same time I must say I imagined that I took a modest part in the enterprise.

Mrs. Stockmann Yes, that is what Thomas is always saying.

Hovstad But who denies it, Mr Stockmann? You set the thing going and made a practical concern of it, we all know that. I only meant that the idea of it came first from the doctor.

Peter Stockmann Oh, ideas—yes! My brother has had plenty of them in his time—unfortunately. But when it is a question of putting an idea into practical shape, you have to apply to a man of different mettle, Mr. Hovstad. And I certainly should have thought that in this house at least—

Mrs Stockmann My dear Peter—

Hovstad How can you think that—?

Mrs Stockmann Won't you go in and have something,

Mr. Hovstad? My husband is sure to be back directly

Hovstad Thank you, perhaps just a morsel. (*Goes into the dining-room*)

Peter Stockmann (*lowering his voice a little*) It is a curious thing that these farmers' sons never seem to lose their want of tact.

Mrs Stockmann Surely it is not worth bothering about! Cannot you and Thomas share the credit as brothers?

Peter Stockmann I should have thought so, but apparently some people are not satisfied with a share

Mrs. Stockmann What nonsense! You and Thomas get on so capitally together (*Listens*) There he is at last, I think (*Goes out and opens the door leading to the hall*)

Dr Stockmann (*laughing and talking outside*) Look here—here is another guest for you, Katherine. Isn't that jolly! Come in, Captain Horster; hang your coat up on this peg Ah, you don't wear an overcoat. Just think, Katherine, I met him in the street and could hardly persuade him to come up! (*CAPTAIN HORSTER comes into the room and greets MRS STOCKMANN He is followed by DR STOCKMANN*) Come along in, boys They are ravenously hungry again, you know Come along, Captain Horster; you must have a slice of beef. (*Pushes HORSTER into the dining-room EJLIF and MORTEN go in after them*)

Mrs Stockmann But, Thomas, don't you see—?

Dr Stockmann (*turning in the doorway*) Oh, is it you, Peter? (*Shakes hands with him*) Now that is very delightful.

Peter Stockmann Unfortunately I must go in a moment—

Dr Stockmann. Rubbish! There is some toddy just coming in You haven't forgotten the toddy, Katherine?

Mrs Stockmann Of course not, the water is boiling now. (*Goes into the dining-room*)

Peter Stockmann. Toddy too!

Dr. Stockmann Yes, sit down and we will have it comfortably.

Peter Stockmann Thanks, I never care about an evening's drinking

Dr. Stockmann But this isn't an evening's drinking

Peter Stockmann It seems to me—. (*Looks towards the dining-room*) It is extraordinary how they can put away all that food

Dr. Stockmann (*rubbing his hands*) Yes, isn't it splendid to see young people eat? They have always got an appetite, you know! That's as it should be. Lots of food—to build up their strength! They are the people who are going to stir up the fermenting forces of the future, Peter

Peter Stockmann May I ask what they will find here to "stir up," as you put it?

Dr. Stockmann Ah, you must ask the young people that—when the times comes We shan't be able to see it, of course. That stands to reason—two old fogies, like us—

Peter Stockmann. Really, really! I must say that is an extremely odd expression to—

Dr. Stockmann Oh, you mustn't take me too literally, Peter I am so heartily happy and contented, you know I think it is such an extraordinary piece of good fortune to be in the middle of all this growing, germinating life. It is a splendid time to live in! It is as if a whole new world were being created around one

Peter Stockmann Do you really think so?

Dr. Stockmann Ah, naturally you can't appreciate it as keenly as I. You have lived all your life in these surroundings, and your impressions have got blunted. But I, who have been buried all these years in my little corner up north, almost without ever seeing a stranger who might bring new ideas with him—well, in my case it has just the same effect as if I had been transported into the middle of a crowded city

Peter Stockmann Oh, a city—!

Dr. Stockmann I know, I know; it is all cramped

enough here, compared with many other places. But there is life here—there is promise—there are innumerable things to work for and fight for, and that is the main thing (*Calls*) Katherine, hasn't the postman been here?

Mrs Stockmann (*from the dining-room*) No.

Dr Stockmann And then to be comfortably off, Peter! That is something one learns to value, when one has been on the brink of starvation, as we have.

Peter Stockmann Oh, surely—

Dr Stockmann Indeed I can assure you we have often been very hard put to it, up there. And now to be able to live like a lord! To-day, for instance, we had roast beef for dinner—and, what is more, for supper too. Won't you come and have a little bit? Or let me show it you, at any rate? Come here—

Peter Stockmann No, no—not for worlds!

Dr Stockmann Well, but just come here then. Do you see, we have got a table-cover?

Peter Stockmann Yes, I noticed it.

Dr Stockmann And we have got a lamp-shade too. Do you see? All out of Katherine's savings! It makes the room so cosy. Don't you think so? Just stand here for a moment—no, no, not there—just here, that's it! Look now, when you get the light on it altogether—I really think it looks very nice, doesn't it?

Peter Stockmann Oh, if you can afford luxuries of this kind—

Dr Stockmann Yes, I can afford it now. Katherine tells me I earn almost as much as we spend.

Peter Stockmann Almost—yes!

Dr Stockmann But a scientific man must live in a little bit of style. I am quite sure an ordinary civil servant spends more in a year than I do.

Peter Stockmann I daresay. A civil servant—a man in a well-paid position—

Dr Stockmann Well, any ordinary merchant, then! A man in that position spends two or three times as much as—

Peter Stockmann. It just depends on circumstances.

Dr Stockmann At all events I assure you I don't waste money unprofitably. But I can't find it in my heart to deny myself the pleasure of entertaining my friends. I need that sort of thing, you know. I have lived for so long shut out of it all, that it is a necessity of life to me to mix with young, eager, ambitious men, men of liberal and active minds, and that describes every one of those fellows who are enjoying their supper in there. I wish you knew more of Hovstad—

Peter Stockmann By the way, Hovstad was telling me he was going to print another article of yours.

Dr Stockmann An article of mine?

Peter Stockmann Yes, about the Baths. An article you wrote in the winter.

Dr Stockmann Oh, that one! No, I don't intend that to appear just for the present.

Peter Stockmann Why not? It seems to me that this would be the most opportune moment.

Dr Stockmann Yes, very likely—under normal conditions. (*Crosses the room*.)

Peter Stockmann (*following him with his eyes*) Is there anything abnormal about the present conditions?

Dr Stockmann (*standing still*) To tell you the truth, Peter, I can't say just at this moment—at all events not to-night. There may be much that is very abnormal about the present conditions—and it is possible there may be nothing abnormal about them at all. It is quite possible it may be merely my imagination.

Peter Stockmann I must say it all sounds most mysterious. Is there something going on that I am to be kept in ignorance of? I should have imagined that I, as Chairman of the governing body of the Baths—

Dr Stockmann And I should have imagined that I—
Oh, come, don't let us fly out at one another, Peter.

Peter Stockmann Heaven forbid! I am not in the habit of flying out at people, as you call it. But I am entitled to request most emphatically that all arrangements shall be made in a business-like manner, through the proper channels, and shall be dealt with by the legally consti-

tuted authorities. I can allow no going behind our backs by any roundabout means.

Dr. Stockmann Have I ever at any time tried to go behind your backs!

Peter Stockmann You have an ingrained tendency to take your own way, at all events, and that is almost equally inadmissible in a well ordered community. The individual ought undoubtedly to acquiesce in subordinating himself to the community—or, to speak more accurately, to the authorities who have the care of the community's welfare

Dr. Stockmann Very likely. But what the deuce has all this got to do with me?

Peter Stockmann That is exactly what you never appear to be willing to learn, my dear Thomas. But, mark my words, some day you will have to suffer for it—sooner or later. Now I have told you. Good-bye

Dr. Stockmann. Have you taken leave of your senses? You are on the wrong scent altogether.

Peter Stockmann I am not usually that. You must excuse me now if I— (*calls into the dining-room*) Good night, Katherine. Good night, gentlemen. (*Goes out*)

Mrs. Stockmann (*coming from the dining-room*) Has he gone?

Dr. Stockmann Yes, and in such a bad temper

Mrs. Stockmann But, dear Thomas, what have you been doing to him again?

Dr. Stockmann. Nothing at all. And, anyhow, he can't oblige me to make my report before the proper time

Mrs. Stockmann. What have you got to make a report to him about?

Dr. Stockmann Hm! Leave that to me, Katherine—It is an extraordinary thing that the postman doesn't come.

(*HOVSTAD, BILLING and HORSTER have got up from the table and come into the sitting-room. EJLIF and MORTEN come in after them.*)

Billing (*stretching himself*) Ah!—one feels a new man after a meal like that.

Hoovstad The mayor wasn't in a very sweet temper to-night, then

Dr. Stockmann, It is his stomach, he has a wretched digestion

Hoovstad I rather think it was us two of the "People's Messenger" that he couldn't digest.

Mrs Stockmann I thought you came out of it pretty well with him

Hoovstad Oh yes, but it isn't anything more than a sort of truce

Billing That is just what it is! That word sums up the situation.

Dr Stockmann We must remember that Peter is a lonely man, poor chap. He has no home comforts of any kind, nothing but everlasting business. And all that infernal weak tea wash that he pours into himself! Now then, my boys, bring chairs up to the table. Aren't we going to have that toddy, Katherine?

Mrs Stockmann (*going into the dining-room*) I am just getting it.

Dr Stockmann Sit down here on the couch beside me, Captain Horster. We so seldom see you— Please sit down, my friends (*They sit down at the table* *MRS. STOCKMANN brings a tray, with a spirit-lamp, glasses, bottles, etc., upon it*)

Mrs Stockmann There you are! This is arrack, and this is rum, and this one is the brandy. Now every one must help themselves

Dr. Stockmann (*taking a glass*) We will (*They all mix themselves some toddy*) And let us have the cigars. Ejlf, you know where the box is. And you, Morten, can fetch my pipe. (*The two boys go into the room on the right*) I have a suspicion that Ejlf pockets a cigar now and then—but I take no notice of it. (*Calls out*) And my smoking-cap too, Morten. Katherine, you can tell him where I left it. Ah, he has got it (*The boys bring the various things*) Now, my friends. I stick to my pipe, you know. This one has seen plenty of bad weather with me up north (*Touches glasses with them*)

Your good health! Ah, it is good to be sitting snug and warm here.

Mrs. Storch (who sits knitting) Do you sail soon, Captain Horster?

Horster I expect to be ready to sail next week.

Mrs. Stockmann I suppose you are going to America?

Horster Yes, that is the plan.

Mrs. Stockmann Then you won't be able to take part in the coming election.

Horster Is there going to be an election?

Billing Didn't you know?

Horster No, I don't mix myself up with those things.

Billing But do you not take an interest in public affairs?

Horster No, I don't know anything about politics.

Billing All the same, one ought to vote, at any rate.

Horster Even if one doesn't know anything about what is going on?

Billing Doesn't know! What do you mean by that? A community is like a ship, every one ought to be prepared to take the helm.

Horster May be that is all very well on shore, but on board ship it wouldn't work.

Hovstad It is astonishing how little most sailors care about what goes on on shore.

Billing Very extraordinary.

Dr. Stockmann Sailors are like birds of passage, they feel equally at home in any latitude. And that is only an additional reason for our being all the more keen.

Hovstad Is there to be anything of public interest in to-morrow's "Messenger"?

Hovstad Nothing about municipal affairs. But the day after to-morrow I was thinking of printing your article—

Dr. Stockmann Ah, devil take it—my article! Look here, that must wait a bit.

Hovstad Really? We had just got convenient space for it, and I thought it was just the opportune moment—

Dr. Stockmann Yes, yes, very likely you are right;

but it must wait all the same. I will explain to you later. (*PETRA comes in from the hall, in hat and cloak and with a bundle of exercise books under her arm*)

Petra Good evening

Dr Stockmann Good evening, Petra, come along. (*Mutual greetings, PETRA takes off her things and puts them down on a chair by the door*)

Petra. And you have all been sitting here enjoying yourselves, while I have been out slaving!

Dr Stockmann. Well, come and enjoy yourself too!

Billing May I mix a glass for you?

Petra (*coming to the table*). Thanks, I would rather do it, you always mix it too strong. But I forgot, father—I have a letter for you. (*Goes to the chair where she has laid her things*)

Dr Stockmann A letter? From whom?

Petra (*looking in her coat pocket*) The postman gave it to me just as I was going out—

Dr Stockmann (*getting up and going to her*). And you only give to me now!

Petra. I really had not time to run up again. There it is!

Dr Stockmann (*seizing the letter*) Let's see, let's see, child! (*Looks at the address*) Yes, that's all right!

Mrs Stockmann Is it the one you have been expecting so anxiously, Thomas?

Dr. Stockmann. Yes, it is. I must go to my room now and—, Where shall I get a light, Katherine? Is there no lamp in my room again?

Mrs Stockmann. Yes, your lamp is all ready lit on your desk

Dr Stockmann Good, good. Excuse me for a moment—, (*Goes into his study*)

Petra. What do you suppose it is, mother?

Mrs Stockmann I don't know, for the last day or two he has always been asking if the postman has not been.

Billing Probably some country patient.

Petra Poor old dad!—he will overwork himself soon. (*Mixes a glass for herself*) There, that will taste good!

Hovstad Have you been teaching in the evening school again to-day?

Petra (*sipping from her glass*) Two hours,

Billing And four hours of school in the morning—

Petra Five hours

Mrs. Stockmann And you have still got exercises to correct, I see

Petra A whole heap, yes.

Horster You are pretty full up with work too, it seems to me

Petra Yes—but that is good One is so delightfully tired after it

Billing Do you like that?

Petra Yes, because one sleeps so well then.

Morten You must be dreadfully wicked, Petra,

Petra Wicked?

Morten Yes, because you work so much Mr Rörlund says work is a punishment for our sins

Ejlif Pooh, what a duffer you are, to believe a thing like that!

Mrs Stockmann Come, come, Ejlif!

Billing (*laughing*) That's capital!

Hovstad Don't you want to work as hard as that, Morten?

Morten No, indeed I don't

Hovstad What do you want to be, then?

Morten I should like best to be a Viking.

Ejlif You would have to be a pagan then.

Morten Well, I could become a pagan, couldn't I?

Billing I agree with you, Morten! My sentiments, exactly.

Mrs. Stockmann (*signalling to him*). I am sure that is not true, Mr Billing

Billing Yes, I swear it is! I am a pagan, and I am proud of it Believe me, before long we shall all be pagans

Morten. And then shall be allowed to do anything we like?

Billing. Well, you see, Morten—.

Mrs Stockmann You must go to your room now, boys, I am sure you have some lessons to learn for to-morrow.

Ejlif I should like so much to stay a little longer—

Mrs Stockmann No, no, away you go, both of you,
(*The boys say good night and go into the room on the left*)

Hovstad Do you really think it can do the boys any harm to hear such things?

Mrs Stockmann, I don't know; but I don't like it.

Petra But you know, mother, I think you really are wrong about it

Mrs Stockmann Maybe, but I don't like it—not in our own home

Petra There is so much falsehood both at home and at school. At home one must not speak, and at school we have to stand and tell lies to the children,

Horster Tell lies?

Petra Yes, don't you suppose we have to teach them all sorts of things that we don't believe?

Billing That is perfectly true.

Petra If only I had the means I would start a school of my own, and it would be conducted on very different lines

Billing, Oh, bother the means—!

Horster Well if you are thinking of that, Miss Stockmann, I shall be delighted to provide you with a school-room. The great big old house my father left me is standing almost empty; there is an immense dining-room downstairs—

Petra (*laughing*) Thank you very much; but I am afraid nothing will come of it.

Hovstad No, Miss Petra is much more likely to take to journalism, I expect. By the way, have you had time to do anything with that English story you promised to translate for us?

Petra No, not yet; but you shall have it in good time

(*DR STOCKMANN comes in from his room with an open letter in his hand*)

Dr Stockmann (waving the letter) Well, now the town will have something new to talk about, I can tell you!

Billing Something new?

Mrs Stockmann What is this?

Dr Stockmann A great discovery, Katherine.

Hovstad Really?

Mrs Stockmann A discovery of yours?

Dr. Stockmann A discovery of mine (*Walks up and down*) Just let them come saying, as usual, that it is all fancy and a crazy man's imagination! But they will be careful what they say this time, I can tell you!

Petra But, father, tell us what it is

Dr Stockmann Yes, yes—only give me time, and you shall know all about it. If only I had Peter here now! It just shows how we men can go about forming our judgments, when in reality we are as blind as any moles—

Hovstad. What are you driving at, Doctor?

Dr Stockmann (standing still by the table) Isn't it the universal opinion that our town is a healthy spot?

Hovstad Certainly

Dr Stockmann Quite an unusually healthy spot, in fact—a place that deserves to be recommended in the warmest possible manner either for invalids or for people who are well—

Mrs Stockmann Yes, but my dear Thomas—

Dr Stockmann And we have been recommending it and praising it—I have written and written, both in the "Messenger" and in pamphlets—

Hovstad Well, what then?

Dr Stockmann. And the Baths—we have called them the "main artery of the town's life-blood," the "nerve-centre of our town," and the devil knows what else—

Billing. "The town's pulsating heart" was the expression I once used on an important occasion—

Dr. Stockmann Quite so. Well, do you know what they really are, these great, splendid, much praised Baths, that have cost so much money—do you know what they are?

Hovstad No, what are they?

Mrs Stockmann Yes, what are they?

Dr Stockmann The whole place is a pesthouse!

Petra The Baths, father?

Mrs Stockmann (at the same time). Our Baths!

Hovstad But, Doctor—

Billing Absolutely incredible!

Dr Stockmann The whole Bath establishment is a whited, poisoned sepulchre, I tell you—the gravest possible danger to the public health! All the nastiness up at Mölledal, all that stinking filth, is infecting the water in the conduit-pipes leading to the reservoir; and the same cursed, filthy poison oozes out on the shore too—

Horster Where the bathing-place is?

Dr Stockmann. Just there

Hovstad How do you come to be so certain of all this, Doctor?

Dr Stockmann I have investigated the matter most conscientiously. For a long time past I have suspected something of the kind. Last year we had some very strange cases of illness among the visitors—typhoid cases, and cases of gastric fever—

Mrs Stockmann Yes, that is quite true.

Dr. Stockmann At the time, we supposed the visitors had been infected before they came, but later on, in the winter, I began to have a different opinion, and so I set myself to examine the water, as well as I could

Mrs. Stockmann Then that is what you have been so busy with?

Dr. Stockmann Indeed I have been busy, Katherine. But here I had none of the necessary scientific apparatus, so I sent samples, both of the drinking-water and of the sea-water, up to the University, to have an accurate analysis made by a chemist

Hovstad And have you got that?

Dr Stockmann (showing him the letter) Here it is! It proves the presence of decomposing organic matter in the water—it is full of infusoria. The water is

absolutely dangerous to use, either internally or externally

Mrs Stockmann What a mercy you discovered it in time.

Dr Stockmann You may well say so

Hovstad And what do you propose to do now, Doctor?

Dr. Stockmann To see the matter put right—naturally

Hovstad Can that be done?

Dr Stockmann It must be done Otherwise the Baths will be absolutely useless and wasted But we need not anticipate that, I have a very clear idea what we shall have to do

Mrs Stockmann But why have you kept this all so secret, dear?

Dr Stockmann Do you suppose I was going to run about the town gossiping about it, before I had absolute proof? No, thank you I am not such a fool

Petra Still, you might have told us—

Dr Stockmann Not a living soul But to-morrow you may run round to the old Badger—

Mrs Stockmann Oh, Thomas! Thomas!

Dr Stockmann Well, to your grandfather, then The old boy will have something to be astonished at! I know he thinks I am cracked—and there are lots of other people think so too, I have noticed But now these good folks shall see—they shall just see—! (*Walks about, rubbing his hands*) There will be a nice upset in the town, Katherine, you can't imagine what it will be All the conduit-pipes will have to be relaid

Hovstad (getting up) All the conduit-pipes—?

Dr Stockmann Yes, of course The intake is too low down, it will have to be lifted to a position much higher up

Petra Then you were right after all

Dr Stockmann Ah, you remember, Petra—I wrote opposing the plans before the work was begun But at that time no one would listen to me Well, I am going

to let them have it, now! Of course I have prepared a report for the Baths Committee, I have had it ready for a week, and was only waiting for this to come (*Shows the letter*) Now it shall go off at once (*Goes into his room and comes back with some papers*) Look at that! Four closely written sheets!—and the letter shall go with them Give me a bit of paper, Katherine—something to wrap them up in. That will do! Now give it to—to—(*stamps his foot*)—what the deuce is her name?—give it to the maid, and tell her to take it at once to the Mayor

(*Mrs Stockmann takes the packet and goes out through the dining-room*)

Petra What do you think uncle Peter will say, father?

Dr. Stockmann What is there for him to say? I should think he would be very glad that such an important truth has been brought to light

Hovstad Will you let me print a short note about your discovery in the "Messenger?"

Dr. Stockmann I shall be very much obliged if you will

Hovstad It is very desirable that the public should be informed of it without delay.

Dr. Stockmann Certainly

Mrs Stockmann (*coming back*) She has just gone with it.

Billing Upon my soul, Doctor, you are going to be the foremost man in the town!

Dr. Stockmann (*walking about happily*) Nonsense! As a matter of fact I have done nothing more than my duty I have only made a lucky find—that's all Still, all the same—

Billing Hovstad, don't you think the town ought to give Dr. Stockmann some sort of testimonial?

Hovstad I will suggest it, anyway

Billing And I will speak to Aslaksen about it

Dr. Stockmann No, my good friends, don't let us have any of that nonsense I won't hear of anything of the kind And if the Baths Committee should think of

voting me an increase of salary, I will not accept it. Do you hear, Katherine?—I won't accept it

Mrs Stockmann You are quite right, Thomas.

Petra (lifting her glass) Your health, father!

Hovstad and Billing Your health, Doctor! Good health!

Horster (touches glasses with DR STOCKMANN) I hope it will bring you nothing but good luck.

Dr Stockmann Thank you, thank you, my dear fellows! I feel tremendously happy! It is a splendid thing for a man to be able to feel that he has done a service to his native town and to his fellow-citizens. Hurrah, Katherine! *(He puts his arms round her and whirls her round and round, while she protests with laughing cries. They all laugh, clap their hands, and cheer the DOCTOR. The boys put their heads in at the door to see what is going on.)*

ACT II

(SCENE—*The same. The door into the dining-room is shut. It is morning. MRS STOCKMANN, with a sealed letter in her hand, comes in from the dining-room, goes to the door of the DOCTOR'S study, and peeps in.*)

Mrs Stockmann Are you in, Thomas?

Dr Stockmann (from within his room) Yes, I have just come in. *(Comes into the room.)* What is it?

Mrs Stockmann A letter from your brother

Dr Stockmann Aha, let us see! *(Opens the letter and reads.)* "I return herewith the manuscript you sent me"—*(reads on in a low murmur)* Hm!—

Mrs Stockmann What does he say?

Dr Stockmann (putting the papers in his pocket) Oh, he only writes that he will come up here himself about midday.

Mrs Stockmann. Well, try and remember to be at home this time

Dr Stockmann That will be all right, I have got through all my morning visits

Mrs Stockmann I am extremely curious to know how he takes it

Dr Stockmann You will see he won't like it's having been I, and not he, that made the discovery

Mrs Stockmann Aren't you a little nervous about that?

Dr Stockmann Oh, he really will be pleased enough, you know But, at the same time, Peter is so confoundedly afraid of anyone's doing any service to the town except himself

Mrs Stockmann I will tell you what, Thomas—you should be good natured, and share the credit of this with him Couldn't you make out that it was he who set you on the scent of this discovery?

Dr Stockmann I am quite willing If only I can get the thing set right. I—

(*MORTEN KIL* puts his head in through the door leading from the hall, looks round in an enquiring manner, and chuckles)

Morten Kil (slyly) Is it—is it true?

Mrs Stockmann (going to the door) Father!—is it you?

Dr Stockmann Ah, Mr. Kil—good morning, good morning!

Mrs Stockmann But come along in

Morten Kil If it is true, I will, if not, I am off

Dr Stockmann If what is true?

Morten Kil This tale about the water supply, Is it true?

Dr Stockmann Certainly it is true. But how did you come to hear it?

Morten Kil (coming in) Petra ran in on her way to the school—

Dr Stockmann Did she?

Morten Kil Yes, and she declares that— I thought she was only making a fool of me, but it isn't like Petra to do that,

Dr Stockmann Of course not. How could you imagine such a thing!

Morten Kiil Oh well, it is better never to trust anybody; you may find you have been made a fool of before you know where you are. But it is really true, all the same?

Dr. Stockmann. You can depend upon it that it is true. Won't you sit down? (*Settles him on the couch*) Isn't it a real bit of luck for the town—

Morten. Kiil (*suppressing his laughter*) A bit of luck for the town?

Dr Stockmann Yes, that I made the discovery in good time

Morten Kiil (*as before*) Yes, yes, yes!—But I should never have thought you the sort of man to pull your own brother's leg like this!

Dr Stockmann Pull his leg!

Mrs Stockmann Really, father dear—

Morten Kiil (*resting his hands and his chin on the handle of his stick and winking slyly at the DOCTOR*) Let me see, what was the story? Some kind of beast that had got into the water-pipes, wasn't it?

Dr Stockmann Infusoria—yes.

Morten Kiil And a lot of these beasts had got in, according to Petra—a tremendous lot

Dr. Stockmann Certainly, hundreds of thousands of them, probably.

Morten Kiil But no one can see them—isn't that so?

Dr Stockmann Yes, you can't see them

Morten Kiil (*with a quiet chuckle*) Damme—it's the finest story I have ever heard!

Dr Stockmann What do you mean?

Morten Kiil But you will never get the Mayor to believe a thing like that

Dr Stockmann We shall see

Morten Kiil Do you think he will be fool enough to—?

Dr Stockmann. I hope the whole town will be fools enough

Morten Kiil. The whole town! Well, it wouldn't be a bad thing. It would just serve them right, and teach them a lesson. They think themselves so much cleverer than we old fellows. They hounded me out of the council, they did, I tell you—they hounded me out. Now they shall pay for it. You pull their legs too, Thomas!

Dr Stockmann. Really, I—

Morten Kiil. You pull their legs! (*Gets up*) If you can work it so that the Mayor and his friends all swallow the same bait, I will give ten pounds to a charity—like a shot!

Dr Stockmann. That is very kind of you.

Morten Kiil. Yes, I haven't got much money to throw away, I can tell you, but if you can work this, I will give five pounds to a charity at Christmas.

(*Hovstad comes in by the hall door*)

Hovstad. Good morning! (*Stops*) Oh, I beg your pardon—

Dr Stockmann. Not at all, come in.

Morten Kiil (*with another chuckle*) Oh!—is he in this too?

Hovstad. What do you mean?

Dr Stockmann. Certainly he is.

Morten Kiil. I might have known it! It must get into the papers. You know how to do it, Thomas! Set your wits to work. Now I must go.

Dr Stockmann. Won't you stay a little while?

Morten Kiil. No, I must be off now. You keep up this game for all it is worth, you won't repent it. I'm damned if you will!

(*He goes out, MRS STOCKMANN follows him into the hall*)

Dr Stockmann (*laughing*) Just imagine—the old chap doesn't believe a word of all this about the water supply.

Hovstad. Oh that was it, then?

Dr Stockmann. Yes, that was what we were talking about. Perhaps it is the same thing that brings you here?

Hovstad Yes, it is. Can you spare me a few minutes, Doctor?

Dr Stockmann As long as you like, my dear fellow.

Hovstad Have you heard from the Mayor yet?

Dr Stockmann Not yet. He is coming here later.

Hovstad I have given the matter a great deal of thought since last night.

Dr Stockmann Well?

Hovstad From your point of view, as a doctor and a man of science, this affair of the water-supply is an isolated matter. I mean, you do not realise that it involves a great many other things.

Dr Stockmann How, do you mean?—Let us sit down, my dear fellow. No, sit here on the couch. (*HOVSTAD sits down on the couch, DR STOCKMANN on a chair on the other side of the table.*) Now then. You mean that—?

Hovstad You said yesterday that the pollution of the water was due to impurities in the soil.

Dr Stockmann Yes, unquestionably it is due to that poisonous morass up at Mølledal.

Hovstad Begging your pardon, doctor, I fancy it is due to quite another morass altogether.

Dr Stockmann What morass?

Hovstad The morass that the whole life of our town is built on and is rotting in.

Dr Stockmann What the deuce are you driving at, Hovstad?

Hovstad The whole of the town's interests have, little by little, got into the hands of a pack of officials.

Dr Stockmann Oh, come!—they are not all officials.

Hovstad No, but those that are not officials are at any rate the officials' friends and adherents, it is the wealthy folk, the old families in the town, that have got us entirely in their hands.

Dr Stockmann Yes, but after all they are men of ability and knowledge.

Hovstad Did they show any ability or knowledge when they laid the conduit-pipes where they are now?

Dr Stockmann No, of course that was a great piece of stupidity on their part. But that is going to be set right now

Hovstad Do you think that will be all such plain sailing?

Dr Stockmann Plain sailing or no, it has got to be done, anyway

Hovstad Yes, provided the press takes up the question.

Dr Stockmann I don't think that will be necessary, my dear fellow, I am certain my brother—

Hovstad Excuse me, doctor, I feel bound to tell you I am inclined to take the matter up.

Dr Stockmann In the paper?

Hovstad Yes. When I took over the "People's Messenger" my idea was to break up this ring of self-opinionated old fossils who had got hold of all the influence.

Dr Stockmann But you know you told me yourself what the result had been, you nearly ruined your paper

Hovstad Yes, at the time we were obliged to climb down a peg or two, it is quite true, because there was a danger of the whole project of the Baths coming to nothing if they failed us. But now the scheme has been carried through, and we can dispense with these grand gentlemen

Dr Stockmann Dispense with them, yes, but we owe them a great debt of gratitude

Hovstad That shall be recognised ungrudgingly. But a journalist of my democratic tendencies cannot let such an opportunity as this slip. The bubble of official infallibility must be pricked. This superstition must be destroyed, like any other.

Dr Stockmann I am whole-heartedly with you in that, Mr Hovstad, if it is a superstition, away with it!

Hovstad. I should be very reluctant to bring the Mayor into it, because he is your brother. But I am sure you will agree with me that truth should be the first consideration.

Dr Stockmann That goes without saying (*With sudden emphasis*) Yes, but—but—

Hovstad You must not misjudge me I am neither more self-interested nor more ambitious than most men,

Dr Stockmann My dear fellow—who suggests anything of the kind?

Hovstad I am of humble origin, as you know, and that has given me opportunities of knowing what is the most crying need in the humbler ranks of life It is that they should be allowed some part in the direction of public affairs, Doctor That is what will develop their faculties and intelligence and self respect—

Dr Stockmann I quite appreciate that

Hovstad Yes—and in my opinion a journalist incurs a heavy responsibility if he neglects a favourable opportunity of emancipating the masses—the humble and oppressed I know well enough that in exalted circles I shall be called an agitator, and all that sort of thing, but they may call what they like If only my conscience doesn't reproach me, then—

Dr Stockmann Quite right! Quite right, Mr Hovstad But all the same—devil take it! (*A knock is heard at the door*) Come in!

(*ASLAKSEN appears at the door He is poorly but decently dressed, in black, with a slightly crumpled white neckcloth, he wears gloves and has a felt hat in his hand*)

Aslaksen (*bowing*). Excuse my taking the liberty, Doctor—

Dr Stockmann (*getting up*) Ah, it is you, Aslaksen!

Aslaksen Yes, Doctor.

Hovstad (*standing up*) Is it me you want, Aslaksen?

Aslaksen No, I didn't know I should find you here No, it was the Doctor I—

Dr. Stockmann I am quite at your service. What is it?

Aslaksen. Is what I heard from Mr Billing true, sir—that you mean to improve our water-supply?

Dr Stockmann. Yes, for the Baths

Aslaksen. Quite so, I understand. Well, I have come to say that I will back that up by every means in my power

Hovstad (to the Doctor) You see!

Dr. Stockmann. I shall be very grateful to you, but—

Aslaksen. Because it may be no bad thing to have us small tradesmen at your back. We form, as it were, a compact majority in the town—if we choose. And it is always a good thing to have the majority with you, Doctor.

Dr Stockmann. That is undeniably true; but I confess I don't see why such unusual precautions should be necessary in this case. It seems to me that such a plain, straightforward thing—

Aslaksen. Oh, it may be very desirable all the same. I know our local authorities so well, officials are not generally very ready to act on proposals that come from other people. That is why I think it would not be at all amiss if we made a little demonstration.

Hovstad. That's right.

Dr Stockmann. Demonstration, did you say? What on earth are you going to make a demonstration about?

Aslaksen. We shall proceed with the greatest moderation, Doctor. Moderation is always my aim, it is the greatest virtue in a citizen—at least, I think so

Dr Stockmann. It is well known to be a characteristic of yours, Mr Aslaksen.

Aslaksen. Yes, I think I may pride myself on that. And this matter of the water-supply is of the greatest importance to us small tradesmen. The Baths promise to be a regular gold-mine for the town. We shall all make our living out of them, especially those of us who are householders. That is why we will back up the project as strongly as possible. And as I am at present Chairman of the Householders' Association—

Dr Stockmann. Yes—?

Aslaksen. And, what is more, local secretary of the Temperance Society—you know, sir, I suppose, that I am a worker in the temperance cause?

Dr Stockmann Of course, of course

Aslaksen Well, you can understand that I come into contact with a great many people And as I have the reputation of a temperate and law-abiding citizen—like yourself, Doctor—I have a certain influence in the town, a little bit of power, if I may be allowed to say so,

Dr Stockmann I know that quite well, Mr Aslaksen

Aslaksen So you see it would be an easy matter for me to set on foot some testimonial, if necessary,

Dr Stockmann A testimonial?

Aslaksen Yes, some kind of an address of thanks from the townsmen for your share in a matter of such importance to the community I need scarcely say that it would have to be drawn up with the greatest regard to moderation, so as not to offend the authorities—who, after all, have the reins in their hands If we pay strict attention to that, no one can take it amiss, I should think!

Hovstad Well, and even supposing they didn't like it—

Aslaksen No, no, no, there must be no discourtesy to the authorities, Mr Hovstad It is no use falling foul of those upon whom our welfare so closely depends. I have done that in my time, and no good ever comes of it But no one can take exception to a reasonable and frank expression of a citizen's views

Dr Stockmann (*shaking him by the hand*) I can't tell you, dear Mr Aslaksen, how extremely pleased I am to find such hearty support among my fellow-citizens I am delighted—delighted! Now, you will take a small glass of sherry, eh?

Aslaksen No, thank you, I never drink alcohol of that kind

Dr Stockmann Well, what do you say to a glass of beer, then?

Aslaksen Nor that either, thank you, Doctor I never drink anything as early as this I am going into town now to talk this over with one or two householders, and prepare the ground

Dr Stockmann It is tremendously kind of you, Mr Aslaksen, but I really cannot understand the necessity for all these precautions. It seems to me that the thing should go of itself.

Aslaksen The authorities are somewhat slow to move, Doctor. Far be it from me to seem to blame them—

Hovstad We are going to stir them up in the paper to-morrow, Aslaksen.

Aslaksen But not violently, I trust, Mr Hovstad. Proceed with moderation, or you will do nothing with them. You may take my advice; I have gathered my experience in the school of life. Well, I must say good-bye, Doctor. You know now that we small tradesmen are at your back at all events, like a solid wall. You have the compact majority on your side, Doctor.

Dr Stockmann I am very much obliged, dear Mr. Aslaksen. (*Shakes hands with him*) Good-bye, good-bye.

Aslaksen Are you going my way, towards the printing-office, Mr Hovstad?

Hovstad I will come later, I have something to settle up first.

Aslaksen Very well. (*Bows and goes out, STOCKMANN follows him into the hall*)

Hovstad (*as STOCKMANN comes in again*) Well, what do you think of that, Doctor? Don't you think it is high time we stirred a little life into all this slackness and vacillation and cowardice?

Dr Stockmann Are you referring to Aslaksen?

Hovstad Yes, I am. He is one of those who are floundering in a bog—decent enough fellow though he may be, otherwise. And most of the people here are in just the same case—see-sawing and edging first to one side and then to the other, so overcome with caution and scruple that they never dare to take any decided step.

Dr Stockmann Yes, but Aslaksen seemed to me so thoroughly well-intentioned.

Hovstad There is one thing I esteem higher than that;

and that is for a man to be self-reliant and sure of himself

Dr Stockmann I think you are perfectly right there.

Hovstad That is why I want to seize this opportunity, and try if I cannot manage to put a little virility into these well-intentioned people for once. The idol of Authority must be shattered in this town. This gross and inexcusable blunder about the water-supply must be brought home to the mind of every municipal voter.

Dr Stockmann Very well, if you are of opinion that it is for the good of the community, so be it. But not until I have had a talk with my brother.

Hovstad Anyway, I will get a leading article ready; and if the Mayor refuses to take the matter up—

Dr Stockmann How can you suppose such a thing possible?

Hovstad. It is conceivable. And in that case—

Dr Stockmann In that case I promise you— Look here, in that case you may print my report—every word of it.

Hovstad May I? Have I your word for it?

Dr Stockmann (*giving him the MS*) Here it is; take it with you. It can do no harm for you to read it through, and you can give it me back later on.

Hovstad Good, good! That is what I will do. And now good-bye, Doctor.

Dr Stockmann. Good-bye, good-bye. You will see everything will run quite smoothly, Mr Hovstad—quite smoothly.

Hovstad Hm!—we shall see. (*Bows and goes out*)

Dr Stockmann (*opens the dining-room door and looks in*) Katherine! Oh, you are back, Petra?

Petra (*coming in*) Yes, I have just come from the school.

Mrs Stockmann (*coming in*) Has he not been here yet?

Dr Stockmann Peter? No. But I have had a long talk with Hovstad. He is quite excited about my discovery. I find it has a much wider bearing than I at

first imagined. And he has put his paper at my disposal if necessity should arise

Mrs Stockmann Do you think it will?

Dr Stockmann Not for a moment. But at all events it makes me feel proud to know that I have the liberal-minded independent press on my side. Yes, and—just imagine—I have had a visit from the Chairman of the Householders' Association!

Mrs Stockmann Oh! What did he want?

Dr Stockmann To offer me his support too. They will support me in a body if it should be necessary. Katherine—do you know what I have got behind me?

Mrs Stockmann Behind you? No, what have you got behind you?

Dr Stockmann The compact majority.

Mrs Stockmann Really? Is that a good thing for you Thomas?

Dr Stockmann I should think it was a good thing (*Walks up and down rubbing his hands*) By Jove, it's a fine thing to feel this bond of brotherhood between oneself and one's fellow citizens!

Petra And to be able to do so much that is good and useful, father!

Dr Stockmann And for one's own native town into the bargain, my child!

Mrs Stockmann That was a ring at the bell.

Dr Stockmann It must be he, then (*A knock is heard at the door*) Come in!

Peter Stockmann (*comes in from the hall*) Good morning

Dr Stockmann Glad to see you, Peter!

Mrs Stockmann Good morning, Peter. How are you?

Peter Stockmann So so, thank you (*To DR STOCKMANN*) I received from you yesterday, after office hours, a report dealing with the condition of the water at the Baths

Dr Stockmann Yes. Have you read it?

Peter Stockmann Yes, I have,

Dr. Stockmann And what have you to say to it?

Peter Stockmann (with a sidelong glance) Hm!—

Mrs Stockmann Come along, Petra (She and PETRA go into the room on the left)

Peter Stockmann (after a pause) Was it necessary to make all these investigations behind my back?

Dr Stockmann Yes, because until I was absolutely certain about it—

Peter Stockmann Then you mean that you are absolutely certain now?

Dr. Stockmann Surely you are convinced of that

Peter Stockmann. Is it your intention to bring this document before the Baths Committee as a sort of official communication?

Dr Stockmann Certainly Something must be done in the matter—and that quickly

Peter Stockmann As usual, you employ violent expressions in your report You say, amongst other things, that what we offer visitors in our Baths is a permanent supply of poison

Dr Stockmann Well, can you describe it any other way, Peter? Just think—water that is poisonous, whether you drink it or bathe in it! And this we offer to the poor sick folk who come to us trustfully and pay us at an exorbitant rate to be made well again!

Peter Stockmann. And your reasoning leads you to this conclusion, that we must build a sewer to draw off the alleged impurities from Mölledal and must relay the water-conduits

Dr Stockmann Yes. Do you see any other way out of it? I don't

Peter Stockmann I made a pretext this morning to go and see the town engineer, and, as if only half seriously, broached the subject of these proposals as a thing we might perhaps have to take under consideration some time later on

Dr. Stockmann Some time later on!

Peter Stockmann He smiled at what he considered to be my extravagance, naturally Have you taken the

not a single word of it—must come to the ears of the public.

Dr Stockmann. I am afraid you will not be able to prevent that now, my dear Peter

Peter Stockmann. It must and shall be prevented.

Dr Stockmann. It is no use, I tell you. There are too many people that know about it.

Peter Stockmann. That know about it? Who? Surely you don't mean those fellows on the "People's Messenger"?

Dr Stockmann. Yes, they know. The liberal-minded independent press is going to see that you do your duty.

Peter Stockmann (after a short pause). You are an extraordinarily independent man, Thomas. Have you given no thought to the consequences this may have for yourself?

Dr Stockmann. Consequences?—for me?

Peter Stockmann. For you and yours, yes.

Dr Stockmann. What the deuce do you mean?

Peter Stockmann. I believe I have always behaved in a brotherly way to you—have always been ready to oblige or to help you?

Dr Stockmann. Yes, you have, and I am grateful to you for it.

Peter Stockmann. There is no need. Indeed, to some extent I was forced to do so—for my own sake. I always hoped that, if I helped to improve your financial position, I should be able to keep some check on you.

Dr Stockmann. What!! Then it was only for your own sake—!

Peter Stockmann. Up to a certain point, yes. It is painful for a man in an official position to have his nearest relative compromising himself time after time.

Dr Stockmann. And do you consider that I do that?

Peter Stockmann. Yes, unfortunately, you do, without even being aware of it. You have a restless, pugnacious, rebellious disposition. And then there is that disastrous propensity of yours to want to write about every sort of possible and impossible thing. The moment an idea

comes into your head, you must needs go and write a newspaper article or a whole pamphlet about it

Dr Stockmann Well, but is it not the duty of a citizen to let the public share in any new ideas he may have?

Peter Stockmann. Oh, the public doesn't require any new ideas The public is best served by the good, old-established ideas it already has

Dr Stockmann And that is your honest opinion?

Peter Stockmann Yes, and for once I must talk frankly to you Hitherto I have tried to avoid doing so, because I know how irritable you are, but now I must tell you the truth, Thomas You have no conception what an amount of harm you do yourself by your impetuosity You complain of the authorities, you even complain of the government—you are always pulling them to pieces, you insist that you have been neglected and persecuted But what else can such a cantankerous man as you expect?

Dr Stockmann What next! Cantankerous, am I?

Peter Stockmann. Yes, Thomas, you are an extremely cantankerous man to work with—I know that to my cost You disregard everything that you ought to have consideration for You seem completely to forget that it is me you have to thank for your appointment here as medical officer to the Baths—

Dr. Stockmann I was entitled to it as a matter of course!—I and nobody else! I was the first person to see that the town could be made into a flourishing watering-place, and I was the only one who saw it at that time I had to fight single-handed in support of the idea for many years, and I wrote and wrote—

Peter Stockmann Undoubtedly But things were not ripe for the scheme then—though, of course, you could not judge of that in your out-of-the-way corner up north But as soon as the opportune moment came I—and the others—took the matter into our hands—

Dr Stockmann Yes, and made this mess of all my beautiful plan It is pretty obvious now what clever fellows you were!

Peter Stockmann. To my mind the whole thing only seems to mean that you are seeking another outlet for your combativeness. You want to pick a quarrel with your superiors—an old habit of yours. You cannot put up with any authority over you. You look askance at anyone who occupies a superior official position, you regard him as a personal enemy, and then any stick is good enough to beat him with. But now I have called your attention to the fact that the town's interests are at stake—and, incidentally, my own too. And therefore I must tell you, Thomas, that you will find me inexorable with regard to what I am about to require you to do.

Dr Stockmann. And what is that?

Peter Stockmann. As you have been so indiscreet as to speak of this delicate matter to outsiders, despite the fact that you ought to have treated it as entirely official and confidential, it is obviously impossible to hush it up now. All sorts of rumours will get about directly, and everybody who has a grudge against us will take care to embellish these rumours. So it will be necessary for you to refute them publicly.

Dr Stockmann. I! How? I don't understand.

Peter Stockmann. What we shall expect is that, after making further investigations, you will come to the conclusion that the matter is not by any means as dangerous or as critical as you imagined in the first instance.

Dr Stockmann. Oh!—so that is what you expect!

Peter Stockmann. And, what is more, we shall expect you to make public profession of your confidence in the Committee and in their readiness to consider fully and conscientiously what steps may be necessary to remedy any possible defects.

Dr Stockmann. But you will never be able to do that by patching and tinkering at it—never! Take my word for it, Peter, I mean what I say, as deliberately and emphatically as possible.

Peter Stockmann. As an officer under the Committee, you have no right to any individual opinion.

Dr Stockmann (*amazed*) No right?

Peter Stockmann In your official capacity, no As a private person, it is quite another matter But as a subordinate member of the staff of the Baths, you have no right to express any opinion which runs contrary to that of your superiors

Dr Stockmann This is too much! I, a doctor, a man of science, have no right to—I

Peter Stockmann The matter in hand is not simply a scientific one It is a complicated matter, and has its economic as well as its technical side

Dr Stockmann I don't care what it is! I intend to be free to express my opinion on any subject under the sun

Peter Stockmann As you please—but not on any subject concerning the Baths That we forbid

Dr Stockmann (*shouting*) You forbid—I! You! A pack of—

Peter Stockmann I forbid it—I, your chief, and if I forbid it, you have to obey

Dr Stockmann (*controlling himself*) Peter—if you were not my brother—

Petra (*throwing open the door*) Father, you shan't stand this!

Mrs Stockmann (*coming in after her*) Petra, Petra!

Peter Stockmann Oh, so you have been eavesdropping

Mrs Stockmann You were talking so loud, we couldn't help—

Petra Yes, I was listening,

Peter Stockmann Well, after all, I am very glad—

Dr Stockmann (*going up to him*) You were saying something about forbidding and obeying?

Peter Stockmann You obliged me to take that tone with you

Dr Stockmann And so I am to give myself the lie, publicly?

Peter Stockmann We consider it absolutely necessary that you should make some such public statement as I have asked for.

Dr Stockmann And if I do not—obey?

Peter Stockmann Then we shall publish a statement ourselves to reassure the public

Dr Stockmann Very well, but in that case I shall use my pen against you I stick to what I have said, I will show that I am right and that you are wrong And what will you do then?

Peter Stockmann Then I shall not be able to prevent your being dismissed

Dr Stockmann What—?

Petra Father—dismissed!

Mrs Stockmann Dismissed!

Peter Stockmann Dismissed from the staff of the Baths I shall be obliged to propose that you shall immediately be given notice, and shall not be allowed any further participation in the Baths' affairs

Dr Stockmann You would dare to do that!

Peter Stockmann It is you that are playing the daring game

Petra Uncle, that is a shameful way to treat a man like father!

Mrs Stockmann. Do hold your tongue, Petra!

Peter Stockmann (looking at PETRA) Oh, so we volunteer our opinions already, do we? Of course, (To MRS STOCKMANN) Katherine, I imagine you are the most sensible person in this house Use any influence you may have over your husband, and make him see what this will entail for his family as well as—

Dr Stockmann My family is my own concern and nobody else's!

Peter Stockmann —for his own family, as I was saying, as well as for the town he lives in

Dr Stockmann It is I who have the real good of the town at heart! I want to lay bare the defects that sooner or later must come to the light of day I will show whether I love my native town

Peter Stockmann You, who in your blind obstinacy want to cut off the most important source of the town's welfare?

Dr Stockmann The source is poisoned, man! Are you mad? We are making our living by retailing filth and corruption! The whole of our flourishing municipal life derives its sustenance from a lie!

Peter Stockmann All imagination—or something even worse. The man who can throw out such offensive insinuations about his native town must be an enemy to our community.

Dr Stockmann (going up to him) Do you dare to—!

Mrs Stockmann (throwing herself between them) Thomas!

Petra (catching her father by the arm) Don't lose your temper, father!

Peter Stockmann I will not expose myself to violence. Now you have had a warning, so reflect on what you owe to yourself and your family. Good-bye. (Goes out.)

Dr Stockmann (walking up and down) Am I to put up with such treatment as this? In my own house, Katherine! What do you think of that!

Mrs Stockmann Indeed it is both shameful and absurd, Thomas—

Petra If only I could give uncle a piece of my mind—

Dr Stockmann It is my own fault. I ought to have flown out at him long ago!—shown my teeth!—bitten! To hear him call me an enemy to our community! Me! I shall not take that lying down, upon my soul!

Mrs Stockmann But, dear Thomas, your brother has power on his side—

Dr Stockmann Yes, but I have right on mine, I tell you.

Mrs Stockmann Oh yes, right—right. What is the use of having right on your side if you have not got might?

Petra Oh, mother!—how can you say such a thing!

Dr Stockmann Do you imagine that in a free country it is no use having right on your side? You are absurd, Katherine. Besides, haven't I got the liberal-minded, independent press to lead the way, and the compact majority behind me? That is might enough, I should think!

Mrs. Stockmann But, good heavens, Thomas, you don't mean to—?

Dr Stockmann Don't mean to what?

Mrs Stockmann To set yourself up in opposition to your brother

Dr Stockmann. In God's name, what else do you suppose I should do but take my stand on right and truth?

Petra Yes, I was just going to say that.

Mrs Stockmann But it won't do you any earthly good If they won't do it, they won't

Dr Stockmann Oho, Katherine! Just give me time, and you will see how I will carry the war into their camp

Mrs Stockmann Yes, you carry the war into their camp, and you get your dismissal—that is what you will do

Dr Stockmann In any case I shall have done my duty towards the public—towards the community. I, who am called its enemy!

Mrs Stockmann But towards your family, Thomas? Towards your own home! Do you think that is doing your duty towards those you have to provide for?

Petra Ah, don't think always first of us, mother.

Mrs Stockmann Oh, it is easy for you to talk, you are able to shift for yourself, if need be But remember the boys, Thomas, and think a little too of yourself, and of me—

Dr Stockmann I think you are out of your senses, Katherine! If I were to be such a miserable coward as to go on my knees to Peter and his damned crew, do you suppose I should ever know an hour's peace of mind all my life afterwards?

Mrs Stockmann I don't know anything about that, but God preserve us from the peace of mind we shall have, all the same, if you go on defying him! You will find yourself again without the means of subsistence, with no income to count upon I should think we had had enough of that in the old days, Remember that, Thomas, think what that means,

Dr Stockmann (collecting himself with a struggle and clenching his fists) And this is what this slavery can bring upon a free, honourable man! Isn't it horrible, Katherine?

Mrs Stockmann Yes, it is sinful to treat you so, it is perfectly true. But, good heavens, one has to put up with so much injustice in this world—There are the boys, Thomas! Look at them! What is to become of them? Oh, no, no, you can never have the heart—*(EJLIF and MORTEN have come in while she was speaking, with their school books in their hands)*

Dr Stockmann The boys—! *(Recovers himself suddenly)* No, even if the whole world goes to pieces, I will never bow my neck to this yoke! *(Goes towards his room)*

Mrs. Stockmann (following him) Thomas—what are you going to do!

Dr Stockmann (at his door) I mean to have the right to look my sons in the face when they are grown men, *(Goes into his room)*

Mrs Stockmann (bursting into tears) God help us all!

Petra Father is splendid! He will not give in

(The boys look on in amazement, PETRA signs to them not to speak)

ACT III

(SCENE —The editorial office of the "People's Messenger" The entrance door is on the left-hand side of the back wall, on the right-hand side is another door with glass panels through which the printing-room can be seen. Another door in the right-hand wall. In the middle of the room is a large table covered with papers, newspapers and books. In the foreground on the left a window, before which stands a desk and a high stool. There are a couple of easy chairs by the table, and other chairs standing along the wall. The room is dingy and uncomfortable, the furniture is old, the chairs stained and torn. In the printing-room

the compositors are seen at work, and a printer is working a hand-press HOVSTAD is sitting at the desk, writing BILLING comes in from the right with DR STOCKMANN'S manuscript in his hand)

Billing Well, I must say!

Hovstad (still writing) Have you read it through?

Billing (laying the MS on the desk) Yes, indeed I have

Hovstad. Don't you think the Doctor hits them pretty hard?

Billing Hard? Bless my soul, he's crushing! Every word falls like—how shall I put it?—like the blow of a sledgehammer

Hovstad Yes, but they are not the people to throw up the sponge at the first blow

Billing That is true, and for that reason we must strike blow upon blow until the whole of this aristocracy tumbles to pieces As I sat in there reading this, I almost seemed to see a revolution in being

Hovstad (turning round) Hush!—Speak so that Aslaksen cannot hear you

Billing (lowering his voice) Aslaksen is a chicken-hearted chap, a coward, there is nothing of the man in him. But this time you will insist on your own way, won't you? You will put the Doctor's article in?

Hovstad Yes, and if the Mayor doesn't like it—

Billing That will be the devil of a nuisance.

Hovstad Well, fortunately we can turn the situation to good account, whatever happens If the Mayor will not fall in with the Doctor's project, he will have all the small tradesmen down on him—the whole of the Householders' Association and the rest of them And if he does fall in with it, he will fall out with the whole crowd of large shareholders in the Baths, who up to now have been his most valuable supporters—

Billing Yes, because they will certainly have to fork out a pretty penny—

Hovstad Yes, you may be sure they will And in this

way the ring will be broken up, you see, and then in every issue of the paper we will enlighten the public on the Mayor's incapability on one point and another, and make it clear that all the positions of trust in the town, the whole control of municipal affairs, ought to be put in the hands of the Liberals

Billing That is perfectly true! I see it coming—I see it coming, we are on the threshold of a revolution!

(A knock is heard at the door)

Hovstad Hush! *(Calls out)* Come in! *(DR STOCKMANN comes in by the street door. HOVSTAD goes to meet him.)* Ah, it is you, Doctor! Well?

Dr Stockmann You may set to work and print it, Mr Hovstad!

Hovstad Has it come to that, then?

Billing Hurrah!

Dr Stockmann Yes, print away. Undoubtedly it has come to that. Now they must take what they get. There is going to be a fight in the town, Mr Billing!

Billing War to the knife, I hope! We will get our knives to their throats, Doctor!

Dr. Stockmann This article is only a beginning. I have already got four or five more sketched out in my head. Where is Aslaksen?

Billing (calls into the printing-room) Aslaksen, just come here for a minute!

Hovstad Four or five more articles, did you say? On the same subject?

Dr Stockmann No—far from it, my dear fellow. No, they are about quite another matter. But they all spring from the question of the water-supply and the drainage. One thing leads to another, you know. It is like beginning to pull down an old house, exactly.

Billing Upon my soul, it's true, you find you are not done till you have pulled all the old rubbish down.

Aslaksen (coming in) Pulled down? You are not thinking of pulling down the Baths surely, Doctor?

Hovstad Far from it, don't be afraid.

Dr Stockmann. No, we meant something quite dif-

ferent. Well, what do you think of my article, Mr. Hovstad?

Hovstad I think it is simply a masterpiece—

Dr Stockmann Do you really think so? Well, I am very pleased, very pleased

Hovstad It is so clear and intelligible One need have no special knowledge to understand the bearing of it. You will have every enlightened man on your side

Aslaksen And every prudent man too, I hope?

Billing The prudent and the imprudent—almost the whole town.

Aslaksen In that case we may venture to print it.

Dr Stockmann I should think so!

Hovstad We will put it in to-morrow morning.

Dr Stockmann Of course—you must not lose a single day What I wanted to ask you, Mr Aslaksen, was if you would supervise the printing of it yourself

Aslaksen With pleasure

Dr Stockmann Take care of it as if it were a treasure! No misprints—every word is important. I will look in again a little later, perhaps you will be able to let me see a proof I can't tell you how eager I am to see it in print, and see it burst upon the public—

Billing Burst upon them—yes, like a flash of lightning!

Dr Stockmann —and to have it submitted to the judgment of my intelligent fellow-townsmen You cannot imagine what I have gone through to-day I have been threatened first with one thing and then with another, they have tried to rob me of my most elementary rights as a man—

Billing What! Your rights as a man!

Dr Stockmann —they have tried to degrade me, to make a coward of me, to force me to put personal interests before my most sacred convictions—

Billing That is too much—I'm damned if it isn't

Hovstad Oh, you mustn't be surprised at anything from that quarter.

Dr Stockmann Well, they will get the worst of it

with me, they may assure themselves of that. I shall consider the "People's Messenger" my sheet-anchor now, and every single day I will bombard them with one article after another, like bomb-shells—

Aslaksen Yes, but—

Billing Hurrah!—it is war, it is war!

Dr Stockmann I shall smite them to the ground—I shall crush them—I shall break down all their defences, before the eyes of the honest public! That is what I shall do!

Aslaksen Yes, but in moderation, Doctor—proceed with moderation—

Billing Not a bit of it, not a bit of it! Don't spare the dynamite!

Dr Stockmann Because it is not merely a question of water-supply and drains now, you know. No—it is the whole of our social life that we have got to purify and disinfect—

Billing Spoken like a deliverer!

Dr Stockmann All the incapables must be turned out, you understand—and that in every walk of life! Endless vistas have opened themselves to my mind's eye to-day. I cannot see it all quite clearly yet, but I shall in time. Young and vigorous standard-bearers—those are what we need and must seek, my friends, we must have new men in command at all our outposts.

Billing Hear, hear!

Dr Stockmann We only need to stand by one another, and it will all be perfectly easy. The revolution will be launched like a ship that runs smoothly off the stocks. Don't you think so?

Hovstad For my part I think we have now a prospect of getting the municipal authority into the hands where it should lie.

Aslaksen And if only we proceed with moderation, I cannot imagine that there will be any risk.

Dr Stockmann Who the devil cares whether there is any risk or not! What I am doing, I am doing in the name of truth and for the sake of my conscience.

Hovstad You are a man who deserves to be supported
Doctor

Aslaksen Yes, there is no denying that the Doctor is
a true friend to the town—a real friend to the community
that he is

Billing Take my word for it, Aslaksen, Dr. Stock-
mann is a friend of the people

Aslaksen I fancy the Householders' Association will
make use of that expression before long

Dr. Stockmann (*affected, grasps their hands*) Thank
you, thank you, my dear staunch friends It is very
refreshing to me to hear you say that, my brother called
me something quite different. By Jove, he shall have it
back, with interest! But now I must be off to see a
poor devil— I will come back, as I said Keep a
very careful eye on the manuscript, Aslaksen, and don't
for worlds leave out any of my notes of exclamation!
Rather put one or two more in! Capital, capital!
Well, good-bye for the present—good-bye, good-bye!

(*They show him to the door, and bow him out.*)

Hovstad He may prove an invaluable useful man to
us

Aslaksen Yes, so long as he confines himself to this
matter of the Baths But if he goes farther afield, I
don't think it would be advisable to follow him

Hovstad Hm!—that all depends—

Billing You are so infernally timid, Aslaksen!

Aslaksen Timid? Yes, when it is a question of the
local authorities, I am timid, Mr. Billing, it is a lesson
I have learnt in the school of experience, let me tell
you. But try me in higher politics, in matters that
concern the government itself, and then see if I am
timid

Billing No, you aren't, I admit But this is simply
contradicting yourself

Aslaksen I am a man with a conscience, and that is the
whole matter If you attack the government, you
don't do the community any harm, anyway, those
fellows pay no attention to attacks, you see—they go

on just as they are, in spite of them. But *local* authorities are different, they *can* be turned out, and then perhaps you may get an ignorant lot into office who may do irreparable harm to the householders and everybody else.

Hovstad. But what of the education of citizens by self government—don't you attach any importance to that?

Aslaksen When a man has interests of his own to protect, he cannot think of everything, Mr Hovstad

Hovstad Then I hope I shall never have interests of my own to protect!

Billing Hear, hear!

Aslaksen (with a smile) Hm! (*Points to the desk*) Mr. Sheriff Stensgaard was your predecessor at that editorial desk

Billing (spitting) Bah! That turncoat.

Hovstad I am not a weathercock—and never will be

Aslaksen A politician should never be too certain of anything, Mr Hovstad. And as for you, Mr Billing, I should think it is time for you to be taking in a reef or two in your sails, seeing that you are applying for the post of secretary to the Bench.

Billing I—I

Hovstad Are you, Billing?

Billing Well, yes—but you must clearly understand I am only doing it to annoy the bigwigs

Aslaksen Anyhow, it is no business of mine. But if I am to be accused of timidity and of inconsistency in my principles, this is what I want to point out my political past is an open book. I have never changed, except perhaps to become a little more moderate, you see. My heart is still with the people, but I don't deny that my reason has a certain bias towards the authorities—the local ones, I mean. (*Goes into the printing-room*)

Billing. Oughtn't we to try and get rid of him, Hovstad?

Hovstad. Do you know anyone else who will advance the money for our paper and printing bill?

Billing It is an infernal nuisance that we don't possess some capital to trade on

Hovstad (sitting down at his desk) Yes, if we only had that, then—

Billing Suppose you were to apply to Dr Stockmann?

Hovstad (turning over some papers) What is the use? He has got nothing

Billing No, but he has got a warm man in the background, old Morten Kiil—"the Badger," as they call him.

Hovstad (writing) Are you so sure *he* has got anything?

Billing Good Lord, of course he has! And some of it must come to the Stockmanns. Most probably he will do something for the children, at all events

Hovstad (turning half round) Are you counting on that?

Billing Counting on it? Of course I am not counting on anything

Hovstad That is right. And I should not count on the secretaryship to the Bench either, if I were you, for I can assure you—you won't get it.

Billing Do you think I am not quite aware of that? My object is precisely *not* to get it. A slight of that kind stimulates a man's fighting power—it is like getting a supply of fresh bile—and I am sure one needs that badly enough in a hole-and-corner place like this, where it is so seldom anything happens to stir one up

Hovstad (writing) Quite so, quite so

Billing Ah, I shall be heard of yet!—Now I shall go and write the appeal to the Householders' Association (*Goes into the room on the right*)

Hovstad (sitting at his desk, biting his penholder, says slowly) Hm!—that's it, is it. (*A knock is heard*) Come in! (*PETRA comes in by the outer door. HOVSTAD gets up*) What, you!—here?

Petra Yes, you must forgive me—

Hovstad (pulling a chair forward) Won't you sit down?

Petra No, thank you, I must go again in a moment.

Hovstad Have you come with a message from your father, by any chance?

Petra No, I have come on my own account (*Takes a book out of her coat pocket*) Here is the English story.

Hovstad Why have you brought it back?

Petra Because I am not going to translate it.

Hovstad But you promised me faithfully—

Petra Yes, but then I had not read it. I don't suppose you have read it either?

Hovstad No, you know quite well I don't understand English, but—

Petra Quite so. That is why I wanted to tell you that you must find something else (*Lays the book on the table*) You can't use this for the "People's Messenger."

Hovstad Why not?

Petra Because it conflicts with all your opinions.

Hovstad Oh, for that matter—

Petra You don't understand me. The burden of this story is that there is a supernatural power that looks after the so-called good people in this world and makes everything happen for the best in their case—while all the so-called bad people are punished

Hovstad Well, but that is all right That is just what our readers want.

Petra And are you going to be the one to give it to them? For myself, I do not believe a word of it You know quite well that things do not happen so in reality.

Hovstad You are perfectly right, but an editor cannot always act as he would prefer He is often obliged to bow to the wishes of the public in unimportant matters. Politics are the most important thing in life—for a newspaper, anyway, and if I want to carry my public with me on the path that leads to liberty and progress, I must not frighten them away If they find a moral tale of this sort in the serial at the bottom of the page, they will be all the more ready to read what is printed above it, they feel more secure, as it were

Petra For shame! You would never go and set a snare like that for your readers, you are not a spider!

Hovstad (smiling). Thank you for having such a good opinion of me. No, as a matter of fact that is Billing's idea and not mine.

Petra. Billing's!

Hovstad Yes, anyway he propounded that theory here one day. And it is Billing who is so anxious to have that story in the paper, I don't know anything about the book.

Petra. But how can Billing, with his emancipated views—

Hovstad Oh, Billing is a many-sided man. He is applying for the post of secretary to the Bench, too, I hear.

Petra I don't believe it, Mr Hovstad. How could he possibly bring himself to do such a thing?

Hovstad Ah, you must ask him that.

Petra I should never have thought it of him.

Hovstad (looking more closely at her) No? Does it really surprise you so much?

Petra. Yes. Or perhaps not altogether. Really, I don't quite know—

Hovstad We journalists are not much worth, Miss Stockmann

Petra. Do you really mean that?

Hovstad I think so sometimes

Petra. Yes, in the ordinary affairs of everyday life, perhaps, I can understand that. But now, when you have taken a weighty matter in hand—

Hovstad This matter of your father's, you mean?

Petra. Exactly. It seems to me that now you must feel you are a man worth more than most.

Hovstad Yes, to-day I do feel something of that sort.

Petra. Of course you do, don't you? It is a splendid vocation you have chosen—to smooth the way for the march of unappreciated truths, and new and courageous lines of thought. If it were nothing more than because you stand fearlessly in the open and take up the cause of an injured man—

Hovstad Especially when that injured man is—ahem! —I don't rightly know how to—

Petra When that man is so upright and so honest, you mean?

Hovstad (more gently) Especially when he is your father, I meant

Petra (suddenly checked) That?

Hovstad Yes, Petra—Miss Petra.

Petra Is it *that*, that is first and foremost with you? Not the matter itself? Not the truth?—not my father's big generous heart?

Hovstad Certainly—of course—that too.

Petra No, thank you, you have betrayed yourself, Mr Hovstad, and now I shall never trust you again in anything

Hovstad Can you really take it so amiss in me that it is mostly for your sake—?

Petra What I am angry with you for, is for not having been honest with my father. You talked to him as if the truth and the good of the community were what lay nearest to your heart. You have made fools of both my father and me. You are not the man you made yourself out to be. And that I shall never forgive you—never!

Hovstad You ought not to speak so bitterly, Miss Petra—least of all now

Petra Why not now, especially?

Hovstad Because your father cannot do without my help

Petra (looking him up and down) Are you that sort of man too? For shame!

Hovstad No, no, I am not. This came upon me so unexpectedly—you must believe that.

Petra. I know what to believe. Good-bye

Aslaksen (coming from the printing-room, hurriedly and with an air of mystery) Damnation, Hovstad!—
(Sees PETRA) Oh, this is awkward—

Petra There is the book, you must give it to some one else. (Goes towards the door)

Hovstad (following her) But, Miss Stockmann—

Petra Good-bye. (Goes out)

Aslaksen. I say—Mr. Hovstad—

Hovstad. Well, well!—what is it?

Aslaksen. The Mayor is outside in the printing-room.

Hovstad. The Mayor, did you say?

Aslaksen. Yes, he wants to speak to you. He came in by the back door—didn't want to be seen, you understand.

Hovstad. What can he want? Wait a bit—I will go myself. (*Goes to the door of the printing-room, opens it, bows and invites PETER STOCKMANN in*) Just see, Aslaksen, that no one—

Aslaksen. Quite so. (*Goes into the printing-room*)

Peter Stockmann. You did not expect to see me here, Mr. Hovstad?

Hovstad. No, I confess I did not.

Peter Stockmann (*looking round*) You are very snug in here—very nice indeed.

Hovstad. Oh—

Peter Stockmann. And here I come, without any notice, to take up your time!

Hovstad. By all means, Mr. Mayor. I am at your service. But let me relieve you of your— (*takes STOCKMANN'S hat and stick and puts them on a chair*) Won't you sit down?

Peter Stockmann (*sitting down by the table*) Thank you (*Hovstad sits down*) I have had an extremely annoying experience to-day, Mr. Hovstad.

Hovstad. Really? Ah well, I expect with all the various business you have to attend to—

Peter Stockmann. The Medical Officer of the Baths is responsible for what happened to-day.

Hovstad. Indeed? The Doctor?

Peter Stockmann. He has addressed a kind of report to the Baths Committee on the subject of certain supposed defects in the Baths.

Hovstad. Has he indeed?

Peter Stockmann. Yes—has he not told you? I thought he said—

Hovstad. Ah, yes—it is true he did mention something about—

Aslaksen (coming from the printing-room) I ought to have that copy—

Hovstad (angrily) Ahem!—there it is on the desk

Aslaksen (taking it) Right

Peter Stockmann But look there—that is the thing I was speaking of!

Aslaksen Yes, that is the Doctor's article, Mr. Mayor

Hovstad Oh, is *that* what you were speaking about?

Peter Stockmann Yes, that is it What do you think of it?

Hovstad Oh, I am only a layman—and I have only taken a very cursory glance at it

Peter Stockmann But you are going to print it?

Hovstad I cannot very well refuse a distinguished man—

Aslaksen I have nothing to do with editing the paper, Mr Mayor—

Peter Stockmann I understand.

Aslaksen I merely print what is put into my hands.

Peter Stockmann Quite so

Aslaksen And so I must— (*moves off towards the printing-room*)

Peter Stockmann No, but wait a moment, Mr Aslaksen You will allow me, Mr Hovstad?

Hovstad If you please, Mr Mayor

Peter Stockmann You are a discreet and thoughtful man, Mr Aslaksen

Aslaksen I am delighted to hear you think so, sir

Peter Stockmann And a man of very considerable influence

Aslaksen Chiefly among the small tradesmen, sir

Peter Stockmann The small tax-payers are the majority—here as everywhere else

Aslaksen That is true

Peter Stockmann And I have no doubt you know the general trend of opinion among them, don't you?

Aslaksen Yes I think I may say I do, Mr Mayor.

Peter Stockmann Yes, Well, since there is such a

praiseworthy spirit of self-sacrifice among the less wealthy citizens of our town—

Aslaksen What?

Hovstad Self-sacrifice?

Peter Stockmann It is pleasing evidence of a public-spirited feeling, extremely pleasing evidence I might almost say I hardly expected it. But you have a closer knowledge of public opinion than I.

Aslaksen But, Mr Mayor—

Peter Stockmann And indeed it is no small sacrifice that the town is going to make.

Hovstad The town?

Aslaksen But I don't understand. Is it the Baths—?

Peter Stockmann At a provisional estimate, the alterations that the Medical Officer asserts to be desirable will cost somewhere about twenty thousand pounds.

Aslaksen That is a lot of money, but—

Peter Stockmann Of course it will be necessary to raise a municipal loan.

Hovstad (getting up) Surely you never mean that the town must pay—?

Aslaksen. Do you mean that it must come out of the municipal funds?—out of the ill-filled pockets of the small tradesmen?

Peter Stockmann. Well, my dear Mr. Aslaksen, where else is the money to come from?

Aslaksen The gentlemen who own the Baths ought to provide that.

Peter Stockmann The proprietors of the Baths are not in a position to incur any further expense.

Aslaksen. Is that absolutely certain, Mr Mayor.

Peter Stockmann I have satisfied myself that it is so. If the town wants these very extensive alterations, it will have to pay for them.

Aslaksen But, damn it all—I beg your pardon—this is quite another matter, Mr. Hovstad!

Hovstad It is, indeed.

Peter Stockmann The most fatal part of it is that we shall be obliged to shut the Baths for a couple of years.

Hovstad Shut them? Shut them altogether?

Aslaksen For two years?

Peter Stockmann Yes, the work will take as long as that—at least

Aslaksen I'm damned if we will stand that, Mr Mayor! What are we householders to live upon in the meantime?

Peter Stockmann Unfortunately that is an extremely difficult question to answer, Mr Aslaksen. But what would you have us do? Do you suppose we shall have a single visitor in the town, if we go about proclaiming that our water is polluted, that we are living over a plague spot, that the entire town—

Aslaksen And the whole thing is merely imagination?

Peter Stockmann With the best will in the world, I have not been able to come to any other conclusion.

Aslaksen Well then I must say it is absolutely unjustifiable of Dr Stockmann—I beg your pardon, Mr Mayor—

Peter Stockmann What you say is lamentably true, Mr Aslaksen. My brother has unfortunately always been a headstrong man.

Aslaksen After this, do you mean to give him your support, Mr Hovstad?

Hovstad Can you suppose for a moment that I—?

Peter Stockmann I have drawn up a short *résumé* of the situation as it appears from a reasonable man's point of view. In it I have indicated how certain possible defects might suitably be remedied without out-running the resources of the Baths Committee.

Hovstad Have you got it with you, Mr Mayor?

Peter Stockmann (*fumbling in his pocket*) Yes, I brought it with me in case you should—

Aslaksen Good Lord, there he is!

Peter Stockmann Who? My brother?

Hovstad Where? Where?

Aslaksen He has just gone through the printing-room.

Peter Stockmann How unlucky! I don't want to

meet him here, and I had still several things to speak to you about.

Hovstad (*pointing to the door on the right*) Go in there for the present.

Peter Stockmann But—?

Hovstad. You will only find Billing in there.

Aslaksen. Quick, quick, Mr. Mayor—he is just coming

Peter Stockmann Yes, very well, but see that you get rid of him quickly (*Goes out through the door on the right, which ASLAKSEN opens for him and shuts after him*)

Hovstad Pretend to be doing something, Aslaksen, (*Sits down and writes* ASLAKSEN begins foraging among a heap of newspapers that are lying on a chair)

Dr Stockmann (*coming in from the printing-room*) Here I am again (*Puts down his hat and stick*)

Hovstad (*writing*) Already, Doctor? Hurry up with what we were speaking about, Aslaksen. We are very pressed for time to-day.

Dr Stockmann (*to ASLAKSEN*) No proof for me to see yet, I hear

Aslaksen. (*without turning round*) You couldn't expect it yet, Doctor.

Dr. Stockmann No, no; but I am impatient, as you can understand I shall not know a moment's peace of mind till I see it in print.

Hovstad. Hm!—It will take a good while yet, won't it, Aslaksen?

Aslaksen Yes, I am almost afraid it will

Dr. Stockmann All right, my dear friends I will come back, I do not mind coming back twice if necessary. A matter of such great importance—the welfare of the town at stake—it is no time to shirk trouble. (*Is just going, but stops and comes back*) Look here—there is one thing more I want to speak to you about.

Hovstad Excuse me, but could it not wait till some other time?

Dr. Stockmann. I can tell you in half a dozen words.

It is only this When my article is read to-morrow and it is realised that I have been quietly working the whole winter for the welfare of the town—

Hovstad Yes but, Doctor—

Dr Stockmann I know what you are going to say You don't see how on earth it was any more than my duty—my obvious duty as a citizen Of course it wasn't, I know that as well as you But my fellow citizens, you know—! Good Lord, think of all the good souls who think so highly of me—!

Aslaksen Yes, our townsfolk have had a very high opinion of you so far, Doctor

Dr Stockmann Yes, and that is just why I am afraid they— Well, this is the point; when this reaches them, especially the poorer classes, and sounds in their ears like a summons to take the town's affairs into their own hands for the future—

Hovstad (getting up) Ahem! Doctor, I won't conceal from you the fact—

Dr Stockmann Ah!—I knew there was something in the wind! But I won't hear a word of it. If anything of that sort is being set on foot—

Hovstad Of what sort?

Dr Stockmann Well, whatever it is—whether it is a demonstration in my honour, or a banquet, or a subscription list for some presentation to me—whatever it is, you must promise me solemnly and faithfully to put a stop to it You too, Mr Aslaksen, do you understand?

Hovstad You must forgive me, Doctor, but sooner or later we must tell you the plain truth—

(*He is interrupted by the entrance of MRS STOCKMANN, who comes in from the street door*)

Mrs Stockmann (seeing her husband) Just as I thought!

Hovstad (going towards her) You too, Mrs Stockmann?

Dr Stockmann What on earth do you want here, Katherine?

Mrs Stockmann I should think you know very well what I want

Hovstad. Won't you sit down? Or perhaps—

Mrs Stockmann No, thank you, don't trouble And you must not be offended at my coming to fetch my husband, I am the mother of three children, you know

Dr Stockmann Nonsense!—we know all about that.

Mrs Stockmann Well, one would not give you credit for much thought for your wife and children to-day, if you had had that, you would not have gone and dragged us all into misfortune

Dr Stockmann Are you out of your senses, Katherine! Because a man has a wife and children, is he not to be allowed to proclaim the truth—is he not to be allowed to be an actively useful citizen—is he not to be allowed to do a service to his native town!

Mrs Stockmann. Yes, Thomas—in reason

Aslaksen Just what I say Moderation in everything

Mrs Stockmann And that is why you wrong us, Mr Hovstad, in enticing my husband away from his home and making a dupe of him in all this

Hovstad I certainly am making a dupe of no one—

Dr Stockmann Making a dupe of me! Do you suppose I should allow myself to be duped!

Mrs Stockmann It is just what you do I know quite well you have more brains than anyone in the town, but you are extremely easily duped, Thomas .(To *Hovstad*) Please to realise that he loses his post at the Baths if you print what he has written—

Aslaksen What!

Hovstad Look here, Doctor—

Dr Stockmann (laughing) Ha—ha!—just let them try! No, no—they will take good care not to I have got the compact majority behind me, let me tell you!

Mrs Stockmann. Yes, that is just the worst of it—your having any such horrid thing behind you

Dr Stockmann Rubbish, Katherine!—Go home and look after your house and leave me to look after the community. How can you be so afraid, when I am so

confident and happy? (*Walks up and down, rubbing his hands*) Truth and the People will win the fight, you may be certain! I see the whole of the broad-minded middle class marching like a victorious army—I (*Stops beside a chair*) What the deuce is that lying there?

Aslaksen Good Lord!

Hovstad Ahem!

Dr Stockmann Here we have the topmost pinnacle of authority! (*Takes the Mayor's official hat carefully between his finger-tips and holds it up in the air*)

Mrs Stockmann The Mayor's hat!

Dr Stockmann And here is the staff of office too. How in the name of all that's wonderful—?

Hovstad Well, you see—

Dr Stockmann Oh, I understand. He has been here trying to talk you over. Ha—ha!—he made rather a mistake there! And as soon as he caught sight of me in the printing-room— (*Bursts out laughing*) Did he run away, Mr Aslaksen?

Aslaksen (*hurriedly*) Yes, he ran away, Doctor.

Dr Stockmann Ran away without his stick or his— Fiddlesticks! Peter doesn't run away and leave his belongings behind him. But what the deuce have you done with him? Ah!—in there, of course. Now you shall see, Katherine!

Mrs Stockmann Thomas—please don't—!

Aslaksen Don't be rash, Doctor.

(*DR STOCKMANN has put on the Mayor's hat and taken his stick in his hand. He goes up to the door, opens it, and stands with his hand to his hat at the salute. PETER STOCKMANN comes in, red with anger. BILLING follows him.*)

Peter Stockmann What does this tomfoolery mean?

Dr Stockmann Be respectful, my good Peter. I am the chief authority in the town now. (*Walks up and down.*)

Mrs Stockmann (*almost in tears*) Really, Thomas!

Peter Stockmann (*following him about*) Give me my hat and stick.

Dr. Stockmann (in the same tone as before). If you are chief constable, let me tell you that I am the Mayor—I am the master of the whole town, please understand!

Peter Stockmann Take off my hat, I tell you. Remember it is part of an official uniform.

Dr. Stockmann Pooh! Do you think the newly awakened lion-hearted people are going to be frightened by an official hat? There is going to be a revolution in the town to-morrow, let me tell you. You thought you could turn me out, but now I shall turn you out—turn you out of all your various offices. Do you think I cannot? Listen to me. I have triumphant social forces behind me. Hovstad and Billing will thunder in the "People's Messenger," and Aslaksen will take the field at the head of the whole Householders' Association—

Aslaksen That I won't, Doctor.

Dr. Stockmann Of course you will—

Peter Stockmann Ah!—may I ask then if Mr. Hovstad intends to join this agitation.

Hovstad No, Mr. Mayor.

Aslaksen No, Mr. Hovstad is not such a fool as to go and ruin his paper and himself for the sake of an imaginary grievance.

Dr. Stockmann (looking round him) What does this mean?

Hovstad You have represented your case in a false light, Doctor, and therefore I am unable to give you my support.

Billing And after what the Mayor was so kind as to tell me just now, I—

Dr. Stockmann A false light! Leave that part of it to me. Only print my article, I am quite capable of defending it.

Hovstad I am not going to print it. I cannot and will not and dare not print it.

Dr. Stockmann You dare not? What nonsense!—you are the editor; and an editor controls his paper, I suppose!

Aslaksen. No, it is the subscribers, Doctor.

Peter Stockmann. Fortunately, yes.

Aslaksen It is public opinion—the enlightened public—householders and people of that kind, they control the newspapers

Dr Stockmann (composedly). And I have all these influences against me?

Aslaksen Yes, you have. It would mean the absolute ruin of the community if your article were to appear.

Dr. Stockmann. Indeed.

Peter Stockmann My hat and stick, if you please (*DR STOCKMANN takes off the hat and lays it on the table with the stick. PETER STOCKMANN takes them up*) Your authority as mayor has come to an untimely end

Dr Stockmann We have not got to the end yet. (*To HOVSTAD*) Then it is quite impossible for you to print my article in the "People's Messenger"?

Hovstad Quite impossible—out of regard for your family as well

Mrs Stockmann You need not concern yourself about his family, thank you, Mr Hovstad

Peter Stockmann (taking a paper from his pocket). It will be sufficient, for the guidance of the public, if this appears. It is an official statement. May I trouble you?

Hovstad (taking the paper) Certainly, I will see that it is printed.

Dr Stockmann But not mine. Do you imagine that you can silence me and stifle the truth! You will not find it so easy as you suppose. Mr Aslaksen, kindly take my manuscript at once and print it as a pamphlet—at my expense. I will have four hundred copies—no, five—six hundred

Aslaksen. If you offered me its weight in gold, I could not lend my press for any such purpose, Doctor. It would be flying in the face of public opinion. You will not get it printed anywhere in the town

Dr. Stockmann Then give it me back

Hovstad (giving him the MS) Here it is

Dr. Stockmann (taking his hat and stick) It shall be

made public all the same. I will read it out at a mass meeting of the townspeople. All my fellow-citizens shall hear the voice of truth!

Peter Stockmann You will not find any public body in the town that will give you the use of their hall for such a purpose.

Aslaksen. Not a single one, I am certain.

Billing No, I'm damned if you will find one.

Mrs Stockmann But this is too shameful! Why should every one turn against you like that?

Dr Stockmann (angrily) I will tell you why. It is because all the men in this town are old women—like you, they all think of nothing but their families, and never of the community.

Mrs Stockmann (putting her arm into his) Then I will show them that an—an old woman can be a man for once. I am going to stand by you, Thomas!

Dr Stockmann Bravely said, Katherine! It shall be made public—as I am a living soul! If I can't hire a hall, I shall hire a drum, and parade the town with it and read it at every street-corner.

Peter Stockmann You are surely not such an arrant fool as that!

Dr Stockmann Yes, I am.

Aslaksen You won't find a single man in the whole town to go with you.

Billing No, I'm damned if you will.

Mrs Stockmann Don't give in, Thomas. I will tell the boys to go with you.

Dr Stockmann That is a splendid idea!

Mrs Stockmann Morten will be delighted, and Ejlf will do whatever he does.

Dr Stockmann Yes, and Petra!—and you too, Katherine!

Mrs Stockmann No, I won't do that, but I will stand at the window and watch you, that's what I will do.

Dr Stockmann (puts his arms round her and kisses her) Thank you, my dear! Now you and I are going to try a fall, my fine gentlemen! I am going to see

whether a pack of cowards can succeed in gagging a patriot who wants to purify society! (*He and his wife go out by the street door*)

Peter Stockmann (shaking his head seriously). Now he has sent *her* out of her senses, too.

ACT IV

(SCENE—*A big old-fashioned room in CAPTAIN HORSTER'S house. At the back folding-doors, which are standing open, lead to an ante-room. Three windows in the left-hand wall. In the middle of the opposite wall a platform has been erected. On this is a small table with two candles, a water-bottle and glass, and a bell. The room is lit by lamps placed between the windows. In the foreground on the left there is a table with candles and a chair. To the right is a door and some chairs standing near it. The room is nearly filled with a crowd of townspeople of all sorts, a few women and schoolboys being amongst them. People are still streaming in from the back, and the room is soon filled.*)

1st Citizen (meeting another) Hullo, Lamstad! You here too?

2nd Citizen I go to every public meeting, I do.

3rd Citizen Brought your whistle too, I expect!

2nd Citizen I should think so. Haven't you?

3rd Citizen Rather! And old Evensen said he was going to bring a cow-horn, he did.

2nd Citizen Good old Evensen! (*Laughter among the crowd*)

4th Citizen (coming up to them) I say, tell me what is going on here to-night.

2nd Citizen Dr Stockmann is going to deliver an address attacking the Mayor

4th Citizen But the Mayor is his brother

1st Citizen That doesn't matter, Dr Stockmann's not the chap to be afraid

3rd Citizen. But he is in the wrong. It said so in the "People's Messenger."

2nd Citizen. Yes. I expect he must be in the wrong this time, because neither the Householders' Association nor the Citizens' Club would lend him their hall for his meeting.

1st Citizen. He couldn't even get the loan of the hall at the Baths.

2nd Citizen. No. I should think not.

A Man in another part of the crowd. I say—who are we to back up in this?

Another Man, beside him. Watch Aslaksen, and do as he does.

Billing (*pushing his way through the crowd with a writing-case under his arm*). Excuse me, gentlemen—do you mind letting me through? I am reporting for the "People's Messenger." Thank you very much! (*He sits down at the table on the left*.)

A Workman. Who was that?

Second Workman. Don't you know him? It's Billing, who writes for Aslaksen's paper.

(CAPTAIN HORSTER brings in MRS STOCKMANN and PETRA through the door on the right. EYLIF and MORTEN follow them in.)

Horster. I thought you might all sit here—you can slip out easily from here, if things get too lively.

Mrs Stockmann. Do you think there will be a disturbance?

Horster. One can never tell—with such a crowd. But sit down, and don't be uneasy.

Mrs Stockmann (*sitting down*). It was extremely kind of you to offer my husband the room.

Horster. Well, if nobody else would—

Petra (*who has sat down beside her mother*). And it was a plucky thing to do, Captain Horster.

Horster. Oh, it is not such a great matter as all that.

(HOVSTAD and ASLAKSEN make their way through the crowd.)

Aslaksen (going up to HORSTER) Has the Doctor not come yet?

Horster He is waiting in the next room. (*Movement in the crowd by the door at the back*)

Hovstad Look—here comes the Mayor!

Billing Yes, I'm damned if he hasn't come after all!

(*PETER STOCKMANN makes his way gradually through the crowd, bows courteously, and takes up a position by the wall on the left. Shortly afterwards DR STOCKMANN comes in by the right-hand door. He is dressed in a black frock-coat, with a white tie. There is a little feeble applause, which is hushed down. Silence is obtained.*)

Dr. Stockmann (in an undertone) How do you feel, Katherine?

Mrs Stockmann All right, thank you (*Lowering her voice*) Be sure not to lose your temper, Thomas

Dr Stockmann Oh, I know how to control myself. (*Looks at his watch, steps on to the platform, and bows.* It is a quarter past—so I will begin (*Takes his MS out of his pocket*))

Aslaksen I think we ought to elect a chairman first

Dr Stockmann No, it is quite unnecessary.

Some of the Crowd Yes—yes!

Peter Stockmann I certainly think too that we ought to have a chairman

Dr Stockmann But I have called this meeting to deliver a lecture, Peter

Peter Stockmann Dr Stockmann's lecture may possibly lead to a considerable conflict of opinion

Voices in the Crowd A chairman! A chairman!

Hovstad The general wish of the meeting seems to be that a chairman should be elected

Dr Stockmann (*restraining himself*) Very well—let the meeting have its way.

Aslaksen Will the Mayor be good enough to undertake the task?

Three Men (*clapping their hands*) Bravo! Bravo!

Peter Stockmann For various reasons, which you will easily understand, I must beg to be excused. But fortunately we have amongst us a man who I think will be acceptable to you all. I refer to the President of the Householders' Association, Mr Aslaksen.

Several voices Yes—Aslaksen! Bravo Aslaksen!

(*DR STOCKMANN takes up his MS and walks up and down the platform*)

Aslaksen Since my fellow-citizens choose to entrust me with this duty, I cannot refuse

(*Loud applause ASLAKSEN mounts the platform*)

Billing (writing) "Mr Aslaksen was elected with enthusiasm"

Aslaksen And now, as I am in this position, I should like to say a few brief words. I am a quiet and peaceable man, who believes in discreet moderation, and—and—in moderate discretion. All my friends can bear witness to that

Several Voices That's right! That's right, Aslaksen!

Aslaksen I have learnt in the school of life and experience that moderation is the most valuable virtue a citizen can possess—

Peter Stockmann Hear, hear!

Aslaksen —And moreover that discretion and moderation are what enable a man to be of most service to the community. I would therefore suggest to our esteemed fellow-citizen, who has called this meeting, that he should strive to keep strictly within the bounds of moderation

A Man by the door Three cheers for the Moderation Society!

A Voice Shame!

Several Voices Sh!—Sh!

Aslaksen No interruptions, gentlemen, please! Does anyone wish to make any remarks?

Peter Stockmann Mr Chairman

Aslaksen The Mayor will address the meeting.

Peter Stockmann In consideration of the close relationship in which, as you all know, I stand to the

present Medical Officer of the Baths, I should have preferred not to speak this evening. But my official position with regard to the Baths and my solicitude for the vital interests of the town compel me to bring forward a motion. I venture to presume that there is not a single one of our citizens present who considers it desirable that unreliable and exaggerated accounts of the sanitary condition of the Baths and the town should be spread abroad.

Several Voices. No, no! Certainly not! We protest against it!

Peter Stockmann. Therefore I should like to propose that the meeting should not permit the Medical Officer either to read or to comment on his proposed lecture.

Dr Stockmann (impatiently). Not permit—! What the devil—!

Mrs Stockmann (coughing). Ahem!—ahem!

Dr Stockmann (collecting himself). Very well. Go ahead!

Peter Stockmann. In my communication to the "People's Messenger," I have put the essential facts before the public in such a way that every far-minded citizen can easily form his own opinion. From it you will see that the main result of the Medical Officer's proposals—apart from their constituting a vote of censure on the leading men of the town—would be to saddle the ratepayers with an unnecessary expenditure of at least some thousands of pounds.

(Sounds of disapproval among the audience, and some cat-calls.)

Aslaksen (ringing his bell). Silence, please, gentlemen! I beg to support the Mayor's motion. I quite agree with him that there is something behind this agitation started by the Doctor. He talks about the Baths, but it is a revolution he is aiming at—he wants to get the administration of the town put into new hands. No one doubts the honesty of the Doctor's intentions—no one will suggest that there can be any two opinions as to that. I myself am a believer in self-government for the people,

provided it does not fall too heavily on the ratepayers. But that would be the case here; and that is why I will see Dr Stockmann damned—I beg your pardon—before I go with him in the matter. You can pay too dearly for a thing sometimes, that is my opinion.

(Loud applause on all sides)

Hovstad. I, too, feel called upon to explain my position. Dr Stockmann's agitation appeared to be gaining a certain amount of sympathy at first, so I supported it as impartially as I could. But presently we had reason to suspect that we had allowed ourselves to be misled by misrepresentation of the state of affairs—

Dr Stockmann: Misrepresentation—!

Hovstad. Well, let us say a not entirely trustworthy representation. The Mayor's statement has proved that. I hope no one here has any doubt as to my liberal principles, the attitude of the "People's Messenger" towards important political questions is well known to every one. But the advice of experienced and thoughtful men has convinced me that in purely local matters a newspaper ought to proceed with a certain caution.

Aslaksen. I entirely agree with the speaker.

Hovstad. And, in the matter before us, it is now an undoubted fact that Dr. Stockmann has public opinion against him. Now, what is an editor's first and most obvious duty, gentlemen? Is it not to work in harmony with his readers? Has he not received a sort of tacit mandate to work persistently and assiduously for the welfare of those whose opinions he represents? Or is it possible I am mistaken in that?

Voices from the crowd. No, no! You are quite right!

Hovstad. It has cost me a severe struggle to break with a man in whose house I have been lately a frequent guest—a man who till to-day has been able to pride himself on the undivided goodwill of his fellow-citizens—a man whose only, or at all events whose essential, failing is that he is swayed by his heart rather than his head.

A few scattered voices. That is true! Bravo, Stockmann!

Hovstad But my duty to the community obliged me to break with him. And there is another consideration that impels me to oppose him, and, as far as possible, to arrest him on the perilous course he has adopted, that is, consideration for his family—

Dr Stockmann Please stick to the water-supply and drainage!

Hovstad —consideration, I repeat, for his wife and his children for whom he has made no provision

Morten Is that us, mother?

Mrs Stockmann Hush!

Aslaksen I will now put the Mayor's proposition to the vote

Dr Stockmann There is no necessity! To-night I have no intention of dealing with all that filth down at the Baths. No, I have something quite different to say to you

Peter Stockmann (aside) What is coming now?

A Drunken Man (by the entrance door) I am a rate-payer! And therefore I have a right to speak too! And my entire—firm—inconceivable opinion is—

A number of voices Be quiet, at the back there!

Others He is drunk! Turn him out! (*They turn him out*)

Dr Stockmann Am I allowed to speak?

Aslaksen (ringing his bell) Dr Stockmann will address the meeting

Dr Stockmann I should like to have seen anyone, a few days ago, dare to attempt to silence me as has been done to-night! I would have defended my sacred rights as a man, like a lion! But now it is all one to me, I have something of even weightier importance to say to you (*The crowd presses nearer to him, MORTEN KILHOLM conspicuous among them*)

Dr Stockmann (continuing) I have thought and pondered a great deal, these last few days—pondered over such a variety of things that in the end my head seemed too full to hold them—

Peter Stockmann (with a cough) Ahem!

Dr Stockmann —but I got them clear in my mind at last, and then I saw the whole situation lucidly. And that is why I am standing here to-night. I have a great revelation to make to you, my fellow-citizens! I will impart to you a discovery of a far wider scope than the trifling matter that our water-supply is poisoned and our medicinal Baths are standing on pestiferous soil.

A number of voices (shouting) Don't talk about the Baths! We won't hear you! None of that!

Dr Stockmann I have already told you that what I want to speak about is the great discovery I have made lately—the discovery that all the sources of our *moral* life are poisoned and that the whole fabric of our civic community is founded on the pestiferous soil of falsehood.

Voices of disconcerted Citizens What is that he says?

Peter Stockmann Such an insinuation—!

Aslaksen (with his hand on his bell) I call upon the speaker to moderate his language.

Dr Stockmann I have always loved my native town as a man only can love the home of his youthful days. I was not old when I went away from here, and exile, longing and memories cast as it were an additional halo over both the town and its inhabitants. (*Some clapping and applause*) And there I stayed, for many years, in a horrible hole far away up north. When I came into contact with some of the people that lived scattered about among the rocks, I often thought it would of been more service to the poor half-starved creatures if a veterinary doctor had been sent up there, instead of a man like me. (*Murmurs among the crowd*)

Billing (laying down his pen) I'm damned if I have ever heard—!

Hovstad It is an insult to a respectable population!

Dr Stockmann Wait a bit! I do not think anyone will charge me with having forgotten my native town up there. I was like one of the eider-ducks brooding on its nest, and what I hatched was—the plans for these Baths. (*Applause and protests*) And then when fate

at last decreed for me the great happiness of coming home again—I assure you, gentlemen, I thought I had nothing more in the world to wish for. Or rather, there was one thing I wished for—eagerly, untiringly, ardently—and that was to be able to be of service to my native town and the good of the community.

Peter Stockmann (looking at the ceiling) You chose a strange way of doing it—ahem!

Dr Stockmann And so, with my eyes blinded to the real facts, I revelled in happiness. But yesterday morning—no, to be precise, it was yesterday afternoon—the eyes of my mind were opened wide, and the first thing I realised was the colossal stupidity of the authorities— (*Uproar, shouts and laughter.* MRS. STOCKMANN coughs persistently)

Peter Stockmann Mr Chairman!

Aslaksen (ringing his bell) By virtue of my authority—!

Dr Stockmann It is a petty thing to catch me up on a word, Mr Aslaksen. What I mean is only that I got scent of the unbelievable piggrishness our leading men had been responsible for down at the Baths. I can't stand leading men at any price!—I have had enough of such people in my time. They are like billy-goats in a young plantation, they do mischief everywhere. They stand in a free man's way, whichever way he turns, and what I should like best would be to see them exterminated like any other vermin— (*Uproar*)

Peter Stockmann Mr Chairman, can we allow such expressions to pass?

Aslaksen (with his hand on his bell) Doctor—!

Dr Stockmann I cannot understand how it is that I have only now acquired a clear conception of what these gentry are, when I had almost daily before my eyes in this town such an excellent specimen of them—my brother Peter—slow-witted and hide-bound in prejudice— (*Laughter, uproar and hisses.* MRS. STOCKMANN sits coughing assiduously ASLAKSEN rings his bell violently)

The Drunken Man (who has got in again) Is it me he is talking about? My name's Petersen, all right—but devil take me if I—

Angry Voices Turn out that drunken man! Turn him out (*He is turned out again*)

Peter Stockmann Who was that person?

1st Citizen I don't know who he is, Mr Mayor.

2nd Citizen He doesn't belong here

3rd Citizen I expect he is a navvy from over at—
(*the rest is inaudible*)

Aslaksen He had obviously had too much beer—Proceed, Doctor, but please strive to be moderate in your language

Dr Stockmann Very well, gentlemen, I will say no more about our leading men And if anyone imagines, from what I have just said, that my object is to attack these people this evening, he is wrong—absolutely wide of the mark For I cherish the comforting conviction that these parasites—all these venerable relics of a dying school of thought—are most admirably paving the way for their own extinction, they need no doctor's help to hasten their end Nor is it folk of that kind who constitute the most pressing danger to the community It is not they who are most instrumental in poisoning the sources of our moral life and infecting the ground on which we stand It is not they who are the most dangerous enemies of truth and freedom amongst us

Shouts from all sides Who then? Who is it? Name! Name!

Dr Stockmann, You may depend upon it I shall name them! That is precisely the great discovery I made yesterday (*Raises his voice*) The most dangerous enemy of truth and freedom amongst us is the compact majority—yes, the damned compact Liberal majority—that is it! Now you know! (*Tremendous uproar Most of the crowd are shouting, stamping and hissing Some of the older men among them exchange stolen glances and seem to be enjoying themselves MRS STOCKMANN gets up, looking anxious EJLIF and MORTEN*

have any considerable number of people on their side as yet

Hovstad So the Doctor is a revolutionary now!

Dr Stockmann Good heavens—of course I am, Mr. Hovstad! I propose to raise a revolution against the lie that the majority has the monopoly of the truth. What sort of truths are they that the majority usually supports? They are truths that are of such advanced age that they are beginning to break up. And if a truth is as old as that, it is also in a fair way to become a lie, gentlemen. (*Laughter and mocking cries*) Yes, believe me or not, as you like, but truths are by no means as long-lived at Methuselah—as some folk imagine. A normally constituted truth lives, let us say, as a rule seventeen or eighteen, or at most twenty years, seldom longer. But truths as aged as that are always worn frightfully thin, and nevertheless it is only then that the majority recognises them and recommends them to the community as wholesome moral nourishment. There is no great nutritive value in that sort of fare, I can assure you, and, as a doctor, I ought to know. These “majority truths” are like last year’s cured meat—like rancid, tainted ham, and they are the origin of the moral scurvy that is rampant in our communities.

Aslaksen It appears to me that the speaker is wandering a long way from his subject.

Peter Stockmann, I quite agree with the Chairman.

Dr Stockmann Have you gone clean out of your senses, Peter? I am sticking as closely to my subject as I can, for my subject is precisely this, that it is the masses, the majority—this infernal compact majority—that poisons the sources of our moral life and infects the ground we stand on.

Hovstad And all this because the great, broad-minded majority of the people is prudent enough to show deference only to well-ascertained and well-approved truths?

Dr Stockmann Ah, my good Mr Hovstad, don’t talk

nonsense about well-ascertained truths! The truths of which the masses now approve are the very truths that the fighters at the outposts held to in the days of our grandfathers. We fighters at the outposts nowadays no longer approve of them, and I do not believe there is any other well-ascertained truth except this, that no community can live a healthy life if it is nourished only on such old marrowless truths.

Hovstad But instead of standing there using vague generalities, it would be interesting if you would tell us what these old marrowless truths are, that we are nourished on.

(Applause from many quarters)

Dr Stockmann Oh, I could give you a whole string of such abominations, but to begin with I will confine myself to one well-approved truth, which at bottom is a foul lie, but upon which nevertheless Mr Hovstad and the "People's Messenger" and all the "Messenger's" supporters are nourished.

Hovstad And that is—?

Dr Stockmann That is, the doctrine you have inherited from your forefathers and proclaim thoughtlessly far and wide—the doctrine that the public, the crowd, the masses, are the essential part of the population—that they constitute the People—that the common folk, the ignorant and incomplete element in the community, have the same right to pronounce judgment and to approve, to direct and to govern, as the isolated, intellectually superior personalities in it.

Billing Well, damn me if ever I—

Hovstad (at the same time, shouting out) Fellow-citizens, take good note of that!

A number of voices (angrily) Oho!—we are not the People! Only the superior folk are to govern, are they!

A Workman Turn the fellow out, for talking such rubbish!

Another. Out with him!

Another (calling out) Blow your horn, Evensen!

(A horn is blown loudly, amidst hisses and an angry uproar)

Dr Stockmann (when the noise has somewhat abated)
Be reasonable! Can't you stand hearing the voice of truth for once? I don't in the least expect you to agree with me all at once, but I must say I did expect Mr Hovstad to admit I was right, when he had recovered his composure a little. He claims to be a freethinker—

Voices (in murmurs of astonishment). Freethinker, did he say? Is Hovstad a freethinker?

Hovstad (shouting) Prove it, Dr Stockmann! When have I said so in print?

Dr Stockmann (reflecting) No, confound it, you are right!—you have never had the courage to Well, I won't put you in a hole, Mr Hovstad Let us say it is I that am the freethinker, then I am going to prove to you, scientifically, that the "People's Messenger" leads you by the nose in a shameful manner when it tells you that you—that the common people, the crowd, the masses, are the real essence of the People That is only a newspaper lie, I tell you! The common people are nothing more than the raw material of which a People is made *(Groans, laughter and uproar)* Well, isn't that the case Isn't there an enormous difference between a well-bred and an ill-bred strain of animals? Take, for instance, a common barn-door hen What sort of eating do you get from a shrivelled up old scrag of a fowl like that? Not much, do you! And what sort of eggs does it lay? A fairly good crow or a raven can lay pretty nearly as good an egg But take a well-bred Spanish or Japanese hen, or a good pheasant or a turkey—then you will see the difference. Or take the case of dogs, with whom we humans are on such intimate terms Think first of an ordinary common cur—I mean one of the horrible, coarse-haired, low-bred curs that do nothing but run about the streets and befoul the walls of the houses Compare one of these curs with a poodle whose sires for many generations have been bred in a gentleman's house, where they have had the best

of food and had the opportunity of hearing soft voices and music. Do you not think that the poodle's brain is developed to quite a different degree from that of the cur? Of course it is. It is puppies of well-bred poodles like that, that showmen train to do incredibly clever tricks—things that a common cur could never learn to do even if it stood on its head (*Uproar and mocking cries*)

A Citizen (calls out) Are you going to make out we are dogs, now?

Another Citizen We are not animals, Doctor!

Dr Stockmann Yes but, bless my soul, we *are*, my friend! It is true we are the finest animals anyone could wish for, but, even amongst us, exceptionally fine animals are rare. There is a tremendous difference between poodle-men and cur-men. And the amusing part of it is, that Mr Hovstad quite agrees with me as long as it is a question of four-footed animals—

Hovstad Yes, it is true enough as far as they are concerned

Dr Stockmann Very well. But as soon as I extend the principle and apply it to two-legged animals, Mr Hovstad stops short. He no longer dares to think independently, or to pursue his ideas to their logical conclusion, so he turns the whole theory upside down and proclaims in the "People's Messenger" that it is the barn-door hens and street curs that are the finest specimens in the menagerie. But that is always the way, as long as a man retains the traces of common origin and has not worked his way up to intellectual distinction.

Hovstad I lay no claim to any sort of distinction. I am the son of humble countryfolk, and I am proud that the stock I come from is rooted deep among the common people he insults.

Voices Bravo, Hovstad! Bravo! Bravo!

Dr Stockmann The kind of common people I mean are not only to be found low down in the social scale, they crawl and swarm all around us—even in the highest social positions. You have only to look at your own fine, distinguished Mayor! My brother Peter is every bit as

plebeian as anyone that walks in two shoes—(*laughter and hisses*)

Peter Stockmann. I protest against personal allusions of this kind

Dr Stockmann (*imperturbably*)—and that, not because he is, like myself, descended from some old rascal of a pirate from Pomerania or thereabouts—because that is who we are descended from—

Peter Stockmann. An absurd legend I deny it!

Dr Stockmann—but because he thinks what his superiors think and holds the same opinions as they. People who do that are, intellectually speaking, common people, and that is why my magnificent brother Peter is in reality so very far from any distinction—and consequently also so far from being liberal-minded

Peter Stockmann. Mr Chairman—!

Hovstad. So it is only the distinguished men that are liberal-minded in this country? We are learning something quite new! (*Laughter*)

Dr Stockmann. Yes, that is part of my new discovery too. And another part of it is that broad-mindedness is almost precisely the same thing as morality. That is why I maintain that it is absolutely inexcusable in the "People's Messenger" to proclaim, day in and day out, the false doctrine that it is the masses, the crowd, the compact majority, that have the monopoly of broad-mindedness and morality—and that vice and corruption and every kind of intellectual depravity are the result of culture, just as all the filth that is draining into our Baths is the result of the tanneries up at Mölledal! (*Uproar and interruptions* DR STOCKMANN is undisturbed, and goes on, carried away by his ardour, with a smile) And yet this same "People's Messenger" can go on preaching that the masses ought to be elevated to higher conditions of life! But, bless my soul, if the "Messenger's" teaching is to be depended upon, this very raising up the masses would mean nothing more or less than setting them straight-way upon the paths of depravity! Happily the theory that culture demoralises is only an old falsehood that our

forefathers believed in and we have inherited. No, it is ignorance, poverty, ugly conditions of life, that do the devil's work! In a house which does not get aired and swept every day—my wife Katherine maintains that the floor ought to be scrubbed as well, but that is a debatable question—in such a house, let me tell you, people will lose within two or three years the power of thinking or acting in a moral manner. Lack of oxygen weakens the conscience. And there must be a plentiful lack of oxygen in very many houses in this town, I should think, judging from the fact that the whole compact majority can be unconscientious enough to wish to build the town's prosperity on a quagmire of falsehood and deceit.

Aslaksen: We cannot allow such a grave accusation to be flung at a citizen community.

A Citizen: I move that the Chairman direct the speaker to sit down.

Vosses (angrily): Hear, hear! Quite right! Make him sit down!

Dr. Stockmann (losing his self-control): Then I will go and shout the truth at every street corner! I will write it in other towns' newspapers! The whole country shall know what is going on here!

Hovstad: It almost seems as if Dr. Stockmann's intention were to ruin the town.

Dr. Stockmann: Yes, my native town is so dear to me that I would rather ruin it than see it flourishing upon a lie.

Aslaksen: This is really serious. (*Uproar and cat-calls.* MRS STOCKMANN coughs, but to no purpose, her husband does not listen to her any longer.)

Hovstad (shouting above the din): A man must be a public enemy to wish to ruin a whole community!

Dr. Stockmann (with growing fervour): What does the destruction of a community matter, if it lives on lies! It ought to be razed to the ground, I tell you! All who live by lies ought to be exterminated like vermin! You will end by infecting the whole country, you will bring about such a state of things that the whole

country will deserve to be ruined And if things come to that pass, I shall say from the bottom of my heart Let the whole country perish, let all these people be exterminated!

Voices from the crowd That is talking like an out-and-out enemy of the people!

Billing There sounded the voice of the people, by all that's holy!

The whole crowd (shouting). Yes, yes! He is an enemy of the people! He hates his country! He hates his own people!

Aslaksen Both as a citizen and as an individual, I am profoundly disturbed by what we have had to listen to. Dr. Stockmann has shown himself in a light I should never have dreamed of I am unhappily obliged to subscribe to the opinion which I have just heard, my estimable fellow-citizens utter, and I propose that we should give expression to that opinion in a resolution I propose a resolution as follows "This meeting declares that it considers Dr. Thomas Stockmann, Medical Officer of the Baths, to be an enemy of the people" (*A storm of cheers and applause A number of men surround the DOCTOR and hiss him MRS STOCKMANN and PETRA have got up from their seats MORTEN and EJLIF are fighting the other schoolboys for hissing, some of their elders separate them*)

Dr. Stockmann (to the men who are hissing him) Oh, you fools! I tell you that—

Aslaksen (ringing his bell) We cannot hear you now, Doctor A formal vote is about to be taken, but, out of regard for personal feelings, it shall be by ballot and not verbal Have you any clean paper, Mr. Billing?

Billing I have both blue and white here

Aslaksen (going to him) That will do nicely, we shall get on more quickly that way Cut it up into small strips—yes, that's it (*To the meeting*) Blue means no, white means yes I will come round myself and collect votes (*PETER STOCKMANN leaves the hall ASLAKSEN and one or two others go round the room with the slips of paper in their hats*)

1st Citizen (to HOVSTAD) I say, what has come to the Doctor? What are we to think of it?

Hovstad Oh, you know how headstrong he is

2nd Citizen (to BILLING) Billing, you go to their house—have you ever noticed if the fellow drinks?

Billing Well I'm hanged if I know what to say There are always spirits on the table when you go

3rd Citizen I rather think he goes quite off his head sometimes

1st Citizen. I wonder if there is any madness in his family?

Billing I shouldn't wonder if there were

4th Citizen No, it is nothing more than sheer malice, he wants to get even with somebody for something or other

Billing Well certainly he suggested a rise in his salary on one occasion lately, and did not get it

The Citizens (together) Ah!—then it is easy to understand how it is!

The Drunken Man (who has got amongst the audience again) I want a blue one, I do! And I want a white one too!

Voices It's that drunken chap again! Turn him out!

Morten Kiil (going up to DR STOCKMANN) Well, Stockmann, do you see what these monkey tricks of yours lead to?

Dr Stockmann I have done my duty

Morten Kiil What was that you said about the tanneries at Mölledal?

Dr Stockmann You heard well enough I said they were the source of all the filth

Morten Kiil My tannery too?

Dr Stockmann. Unfortunately your tannery is by far the worst

Morten Kiil Are you going to put that in the papers?

Dr Stockmann I shall conceal nothing

Morten Kiil That may cost you dear, Stockmann.
(Goes out)

A Stout Man (going up to CAPTAIN HORSTER, with-

out taking any notice of the ladies) Well, Captain, so you lend your house to enemies of the people?

Horster I imagine I can do what I like with my own possessions, Mr Vik.

The Stout Man Then you can have no objection to my doing the same with mine

Horster. What do you mean, sir?

The Stout Man You shall hear from me in the morning (*Turns his back on him and moves off*)

Petra. Was that not your owner, Captain Horster?

Horster Yes, that was Mr. Vik the ship-owner

Aslaksen (with the voting-papers in his hands, gets up on to the platform and rings his bell) Gentlemen, allow me to announce the result. By the votes of every one here except one person—

A Young Man That is the drunk chap!

Aslaksen By the votes of every one here except a tipsy man, this meeting of citizens declares Dr Thomas Stockmann to be an enemy of the people. (*Shouts and applause*) Three cheers for our ancient and honourable citizen community! (*Renewed applause*) Three cheers for our able and energetic Mayor, who has so loyally suppressed the promptings of family feeling! (*Cheers*) The meeting is dissolved (*Gets down*)

Billing Three cheers for the Chairman!

The whole crowd Three cheers for Aslaksen! Hurrah!

Dr Stockmann My hat and coat, Petra! Captain, have you room on your ship for passengers to the New World?

Horster. For you and yours we will make room, Doctor

Dr Stockmann (as PETRA helps him into his coat) Good Come, Katherine! Come, boys!

Mrs Stockmann (in an undertone) Thomas, dear, let us go out by the back way

Dr Stockmann No back ways for me, Katherine (*Raising his voice*) You will hear more of this enemy of the people, before he shakes the dust off his shoes upon you! I am not so forgiving as a certain Person,

I do not say "I forgive you, for ye know not what ye do"

Aslaksen (shouting) That is a blasphemous comparison, Dr Stockmann!

Billing It is, by God! It's dreadful for an earnest man to listen to

A Coarse Voice Threatens us now, does he!

Other Voices (excitedly) Let's go and break his windows! Duck him in the fjord!

Another Voice Blow your horn, Evensen! Pip, pip!
(*Horn-blowing, hisses, and wild cries* DR STOCKMANN goes out through the hall with his family, HORSTER elbowing a way for them)

The Whole Crowd (ho clinging after them as they go)
Enemy of the People! Enemy of the People!

Billing (as he puts his papers together) Well, I'm damned if I go and drink toddy with the Stockmanns to-night!

(*The crowd press towards the exit. The uproar continues outside, shouts of "Enemy of the People!" are heard from without*)

ACT V

(SCENE — DR STOCKMANN'S study. Bookcases, and cabinets containing specimens, line the walls. At the back is a door leading to the hall, in the foreground on the left, a door leading to the sitting-room. In the right-hand wall are two windows, of which all the panes are broken. The DOCTOR'S desk, littered with books and papers, stands in the middle of the room, which is in disorder. It is morning. DR STOCKMANN in dressing-gown, slippers and a smoking-cap, is bending down and raking with an umbrella under one of the cabinets. After a little while he rakes out a stone.)

Dr. Stockmann (calling through the open sitting-room door) Katherine, I have found another one.

Mrs Stockmann (from the sitting-room) Oh, you will find a lot more yet, I expect

Dr Stockmann (adding the stone to a heap of others on the table) I shall treasure these stones as relics Ejlif and Morten shall look at them every day, and when they are grown up they shall inherit them as heirlooms (*Rakes about under a bookcase*) Hasn't—what the deuce is her name?—the girl, you know—hasn't she been to fetch the glazier yet?

Mrs Stockmann (coming in) Yes, but he said he didn't know if he would be able to come to-day

Dr Stockmann. You will see he won't dare to come

Mrs Stockmann Well, that is just what Randine thought—that he didn't dare to, on account of the neighbours (*Calls into the sitting-room*) What is it you want, Randine? Give it to me (*Goes in, and comes out again directly*) Here is a letter for you, Thomas

Dr Stockmann Let me see it (*Opens and reads it*) Ah!—of course

Mrs Stockmann Who is it from?

Dr Stockmann From the landlord Notice to quit,

Mrs Stockmann Is it possible? Such a nice man—

Dr Stockmann (looking at the letter) Does not dare do otherwise, he says Doesn't like doing it, but dare not do otherwise—on account of his fellow-citizens—out of regard for public opinion Is in a dependent position—dare not offend certain influential men—

Mrs Stockmann There, you see, Thomas!

Dr Stockmann Yes, yes, I see well enough, the whole lot of them in the town are cowards, not a man among them dares do anything for fear of the others (*Throws the letter on to the table*) But it doesn't matter to us, Katherine We are going to sail away to the New World, and—

Mrs Stockmann But, Thomas, are you sure we are well advised to take this step?

Dr Stockmann Are you suggesting that I should stay here, where they have pilloried me as an enemy of the people—branded me—broken my windows! And just

look here, Katherine—they have torn a great rent in my black trousers too!

Mrs Stockmann Oh, dear!—and they are the best pair you have got!

Dr Stockmann You should never wear your best trousers when you go out to fight for freedom and truth. It is not that I care so much about the trousers, you know, you can always sew them up again for me. But that the common herd should dare to make this attack on me, as if they were my equals—that is what I cannot, for the life of me, swallow!

Mrs Stockmann There is no doubt they have behaved very ill to you, Thomas, but is that sufficient reason for our leaving our native country for good and all?

Dr Stockmann If we went to another town, do you suppose we should not find the common people just as insolent as they are here? Depend upon it, there is not much to choose between them. Oh, well, let the curs snap—that is not the worst part of it. The worst is that, from one end of this country to the other, every man is the slave of his Party. Although, as far as that goes, I daresay it is not much better in the free West either, the compact majority, and liberal public opinion, and all that infernal old bag of tricks are probably rampant there too. But there things are done on a larger scale, you see. They may kill you, but they won't put you to death by slow torture. They don't squeeze a free man's soul in a vice, as they do here. And, if need be, one can live in solitude. (*Walks up and down*) If only I knew where there was a virgin forest or a small South Sea island for sale, cheap—

Mrs Stockmann But think of the boys, Thomas!

Dr Stockmann (*standing still*) What a strange woman you are, Katherine! Would you prefer to have the boys grow up in a society like this? You saw for yourself last night that half the population are out of their minds, and if the other half have not lost their senses, it is because they are mere brutes, with no sense to lose.

Mrs Stockmann But, Thomas dear, the imprudent things you said had something to do with it, you know.

Dr Stockmann Well, isn't what I said perfectly true? Don't they turn every idea topsy-turvy? Don't they make a regular hotch-potch of right and wrong? Don't they say that the things I know are true, are lies? The craziest part of it all is the fact of these "liberals," men of full age, going about in crowds imagining that they are the broad-minded party! Did you ever hear anything like it, Katherine!

Mrs Stockmann Yes, yes, it's mad enough of them, certainly, but—(*PETRA comes in from the sitting-room*). Back from school already?

Petra Yes I have been given notice of dismissal.

Mrs Stockmann Dismissal?

Dr Stockmann You too?

Petra Mrs Busk gave me my notice; so I thought it was best to go at once.

Dr Stockmann You were perfectly right, too!

Mrs Stockmann Who would have thought Mrs Busk was a woman like that!

Petra Mrs Busk isn't a bit like that, mother, I saw quite plainly how it hurt her to do it. But she didn't dare do otherwise, she said, and so I got my notice.

Dr Stockmann (*laughing and rubbing his hands*) She didn't dare do otherwise, either! It's delicious!

Mrs Stockmann Well, after the dreadful scenes last night—

Petra It was not only that Just listen to this, father!

Dr Stockmann Well?

Petra Mrs Busk showed me no less than three letters she received this morning—

Dr Stockmann Anonymous, I suppose?

Petra Yes

Dr Stockmann Yes, because they didn't dare to risk signing their names, Katherine!

Petra And two of them were to the effect that a man, who has been our guest here, was declaring last night

at the Club that my views on various subjects are extremely emancipated—

Dr Stockmann You did not deny that, I hope?

Petra No, you know I wouldn't Mrs Busk's own views are tolerably emancipated, when we are alone together, but now that this report about me is being spread, she dare not keep me on any longer

Mrs. Stockmann And some one who had been a guest of ours! That shows you the return you get for your hospitality, Thomas!

Dr Stockmann We won't live in such a disgusting hole any longer Pack up as quickly as you can, Katherine, the sooner we can get away, the better

Mrs Stockmann Be quiet—I think I hear some one in the hall See who it is, Petra

Petra (opening the door) Oh, it's you, Captain Horster! Do come in

Horster (coming in) Good morning I thought I would just come in and see how you were

Dr Stockmann (shaking his hand) Thanks—that is really kind of you

Mrs Stockmann And thank you, too, for helping us through the crowd, Captain Horster.

Petra How did you manage to get home again?

Horster Oh, somehow or other I am fairly strong, and there is more sound than fury about these folk

Dr Stockmann Yes, isn't their swinish cowardice astonishing? Look here, I will show you something! There are all the stones they have thrown through my windows Just look at them! I'm hanged if there are more than two decently large bits of hardstone in the whole heap, the rest are nothing but gravel—wretched little things And yet they stood out there bawling and swearing that they would do me some violence, but as for *doing* anything—you don't see much of that in this town

Horster Just as well for you this time, doctor!

Dr Stockmann True enough But it makes one angry all the same, because if some day it should be a question of a national fight in real earnest, you will see

that public opinion will be in favour of taking to one's heels, and the compact majority will turn tail like a flock of sheep, Captain Horster That is what is so mournful to think of, it gives me so much concern, that — No, devil take it, it is ridiculous to care about it! They have called me an enemy of the people, so an enemy of the people let me be!

Mrs Stockmann You will never be that, Thomas

Dr Stockmann Don't swear to that, Katherine. To be called an ugly name may have the same effect as a pin-scratch in the lung And that hateful name—I can't get quit of it It is sticking here in the pit of my stomach, eating into me like a corrosive acid And no magnesia will remove it.

Petra Bah!—you should only laugh at them, father

Horster They will change their minds some day, Doctor

Mrs Stockmann Yes, Thomas, as sure as you are standing here

Dr Stockmann Perhaps, when it is too late Much good may it do them! They may wallow in their filth then and rue the day when they drove a patriot into exile When do you sail, Captain Horster?

Horster Hm!—that was just what I had come to speak about—

Dr Stockmann Why, has anything gone wrong with the ship?

Horster No, but what has happened is that I am not to sail in it

Petra Do you mean that you have been dismissed from your command?

Horster (smiling) Yes, that's just it.

Petra You too

Mrs Stockmann There, you see, Thomas!

Dr Stockmann And that for the truth's sake! Oh, if I had thought such a thing possible—

Horster You mustn't take it to heart, I shall be sure to find a job with some ship-owner or other, elsewhere

Dr Stockmann And that is this man Vik—a wealthy

man, independent of every one and everything—! Shame on him!

Horster He is quite an excellent fellow otherwise; he told me himself he would willingly have kept me on, if only he had dared—

Dr Stockmann But he didn't dare? No, of course not

Horster It is not such an easy matter, he said, for a party man—

Dr Stockmann The worthy man spoke the truth A party is like a sausage machine, it mashes up all sorts of heads together into the same mincemeat—fatheads and blockheads, all in one mash!

Mrs Stockmann Come, come, Thomas dear!

Petra (to HORSTER) If only you had not come home with us, things might not have come to this pass

Horster I do not regret it

Petra (holding out her hand to him) Thank you for that!

Horster (to DR STOCKMANN) And so what I came to say was that if you are determined to go away, I have thought of another plan—

Dr Stockmann That's splendid!—if only we can get away at once

Mrs Stockmann Hush!—wasn't that some one knocking?

Petra That is uncle, surely

Dr Stockmann Aha! (Calls out) Come in!

Mrs Stockmann Dear Thomas, promise me definitely—

(PETER STOCKMANN comes in from the hall)

Peter Stockmann Oh, you are engaged In that case, I will

Dr Stockmann No, no, come in

Peter Stockmann But I wanted to speak to you alone.

Mrs Stockmann We will go into the sitting-room in the meanwhile

Horster And I will look in again later

Dr Stockmann No, go in there with them, Captain Horster, I want to hear more about—

Horster Very well, I will wait, then (*He follows MRS STOCKMANN and PETRA into the sitting-room*)

Dr Stockmann I daresay you find it rather draughty here to-day Put your hat on

Peter Stockmann Thank you, if I may: (*Does so*) I think I caught cold last night, I stood and shivered—

Dr Stockmann Really? I found it warm enough

Peter Stockmann I regret that it was not in my power to prevent those excesses last night

Dr Stockmann Have you anything particular to say to me besides that?

Peter Stockmann (*taking a big letter from his pocket*) I have this document for you, from the Baths Committee

Dr Stockmann My dismissal?

Peter Stockmann Yes, dating from to-day (*Lays the letter on the table*) It gives us pain to do it, but, to speak frankly, we dared not do otherwise on account of public opinion

Dr Stockmann (*smiling*) Dared not? I seem to have heard that word before, to-day, .

Peter Stockmann I must beg you to understand your position clearly. For the future you must not count on any practice whatever in the town

Dr Stockmann Devil take the practice! But why are you so sure of that?

Peter Stockmann The Householders' Association is circulating a list from house to house All right-minded citizens are being called upon to give up employing you; and I can assure you that not a single head of a family will risk refusing his signature They simply dare not.

Dr Stockmann No, no; I don't doubt it, But what then?

Peter Stockmann If I might advise you, it would be best to leave the place for a little while—

Dr. Stockmann Yes, the propriety of leaving the place has occurred to me

Peter Stockmann Good And then, when you have had six months to think things over, if, after mature

consideration, you can persuade yourself to write a few words of regret, acknowledging your error—

Dr. Stockmann I might have my appointment restored to me, do you mean?

Peter Stockmann Perhaps It is not at all impossible

Dr. Stockmann But what about public opinion, then? Surely you would not dare to do it on account of public feeling.

Peter Stockmann Public opinion is an extremely mutable thing And, to be quite candid with you, it is a matter of great importance to us to have some admission of that sort from you in writing

Dr. Stockmann Oh, that's what you are after, is it! I will just trouble you to remember what I said to you lately about foxy tricks of that sort!

Peter Stockmann Your position was quite different then At that time you had reason to suppose you had the whole town at your back—

Dr. Stockmann Yes, and now I feel I have the whole town on my back—(flaring up) I would not do it if I had the devil and his dam on my back—! Never—never, I tell you!

Peter Stockmann A man with a family has no right to behave as you do You have no right to do it, Thomas.

Dr. Stockmann I have no right! There is only one single thing in the world a free man has no right to do. Do you know what that is?

Peter Stockmann No

Dr. Stockmann Of course you don't, but I will tell you A free man has no right to soil himself with filth, he has no right to behave in a way that would justify his spitting in his own face

Peter Stockmann This sort of thing sounds extremely plausible, of course, and if there were no other explanation for your obstinacy— But as it happens that there is

Dr. Stockmann What do you mean?

Peter Stockmann You understand very well what I

mean. But, as your brother and as a man of discretion, I advise you not to build too much upon expectations and prospects that may so very easily fail you

Dr. Stockmann What in the world is all this about?

Peter Stockmann Do you really ask me to believe that you are ignorant of the terms of Mr. Kul's will?

Dr. Stockmann I know that the small amount he possesses is to go to an institution for indigent old workpeople. How does that concern me?

Peter Stockmann In the first place, it is by no means a small amount that is in question. Mr. Kul is a fairly wealthy man.

Dr. Stockmann I had no notion of that!

Peter Stockmann Hm!—hadn't you really? Then I suppose you had no notion, either, that a considerable portion of his wealth will come to your children, you and your wife having a life-rent of the capital. Has he never told you so?

Dr. Stockmann Never, on my honour! Quite the reverse, he has consistently done nothing but fume at being so unconscionably heavily taxed. But are you perfectly certain of this, Peter?

Peter Stockmann I have it from an absolutely reliable source.

Dr. Stockmann Then, thank God, Katherine is provided for—and the children too! I must tell her this at once—(calls out) Katherine, Katherine!

Peter Stockmann (restraining him) Hush, don't say a word yet!

Mrs. Stockmann (opening the door) What is the matter?

Dr. Stockmann Oh, nothing, nothing, you can go back. (She shuts the door. *DR. STOCKMANN walks up and down in his excitement*) Provided for!—Just think of it, we are all provided for! And for life! What a blessed feeling it is to know one is provided for!

Peter Stockmann Yes, but that is just exactly what you are not. Mr. Kul can alter his will any day he likes.

Dr. Stockmann But he won't do that, my dear Peter,

The "Badger" is much too delighted at my attack on you and your wise friends

Peter Stockmann (starts and looks intently at him) Ah, that throws a light on various things

Dr Stockmann What things?

Peter Stockmann I see that the whole thing was a combined manœuvre on your part and his These violent, reckless attacks that you have made against the leading men of the town, under the pretence that it was in the name of truth—

Dr Stockmann What about them?

Peter Stockmann I see that they were nothing else than the stipulated price for that vindictive old man's will

Dr. Stockmann (almost speechless) Peter—you are the most disgusting plebeian I have ever met in all my life

Peter Stockmann All is over between us Your dismissal is irrevocable—we have a weapon against you now (Goes out)

Dr Stockmann For shame! For shame! (Calls out) Katherine, you must have the floor scrubbed after him! Let—what's her name—devil take it, the girl who has always got soot on her nose—

Mrs Stockmann (in the sitting-room) Hush, Thomas, be quiet!

Petra (coming to the door) Father, grandfather is here, asking if he may speak to you alone

Dr Stockmann Certainly he may (Going to the door) Come in, Mr Kiil (MORTEN KIIL comes in. DR STOCKMANN shuts the door after him) What can I do for you? Won't you sit down?

Morten Kiil I won't sit (Looks around) You look very comfortable here to-day, Thomas

Dr Stockmann Yes, don't we!

Morten Kiil Very comfortable—plenty of fresh air I should think you have got enough to-day of that oxygen you were talking about yesterday. Your conscience must be in splendid order to-day, I should think.

Dr Stockmann It is

Morten Knil So I should think. (*Taps his chest*)
Do you know what I have got here?

Dr Stockmann A good conscience, too, I hope

Morten Knil Bah!—No, it is something better than that. (*He takes a thick pocket-book from his breast-pocket, opens it, and displays a packet of papers*)

Dr. Stockmann (*looking at him in astonishment*) Shares in the Baths?

Morten Knil. They were not difficult to get to-day.

Dr Stockmann. And you have been buying—?

Morten K nil As many as I could pay for

Dr Stockmann But, my dear Mr Knil—consider the state of the Baths' affairs!

Morten Knil If you behave like a reasonable man, you can soon set the Baths on their feet again

Dr Stockmann Well, you can see for yourself that I have done all I can, but—, They are all mad in this town!

Morten Knil You said yesterday that the worst of this pollution came from my tannery If that is true, then my grandfather and my father before me, and I myself, for many years past, have been poisoning the town like three destroying angels Do you think I am going to sit quiet under that reproach?

Dr Stockmann Unfortunately I am afraid you will have to

Morten Knil No, thank you I am jealous of my name and reputation They call me "the Badger," I am told A badger is a kind of pig, I believe, but I am not going to give them the right to call me that. I mean to live and die a clean man

Dr Stockmann And how are you going to set about it?

Morten Knil You shall cleanse me, Thomas

Dr Stockmann I!

Morten Knil Do you know what money I have bought these shares with? No, of course you can't know—but I will tell you, It is the money that Katherine and

Petra and the boys will have when I am gone. Because I have been able to save a little bit after all, you know.

Dr. Stockmann *(staring up)* And you have gone and taken Katherine's money for this!

Morten Kri Yes, the whole of the money is invested in the Baths now. And now I just want to see whether you are quite stark, staring mad, Thomas! If you still make out that these animals and other nasty things of that sort come from my tannery, it will be exactly as if you were to flay broad strips of skin from Katherine's body, and Petra's, and the boys'; and no decent man would do that—unless he were mad.

Dr. Stockmann *(walking up and down)* Yes, but I am mad; I am mad!

Morten Kri You cannot be so absurdly mad as all that, when it is a question of your wife and children.

Dr. Stockmann *(standing still in front of him)* Why couldn't you consult me about it, before you went and bought all that trash?

Morten Kri What is done cannot be undone.

Dr. Stockmann *(walks about uneasily)* If only I were not so certain about it—! But I am absolutely convinced that I am right.

Morten Kri *(weighing the pocket-book in his hand)*, If you stick to your mad idea, this won't be worth much, you know. *(Puts the pocket-book in his pocket)*

Dr. Stockmann But, hang it all! it might be possible for science to discover some prophylactic, I should think—or some antidote of some kind—

Morten Kri To kill these animals, do you mean?

Dr. Stockmann Yes, or to make them innocuous.

Morten Kri Couldn't you try some rat's-bane?

Dr. Stockmann Don't talk nonsense! They all say it is only imagination, you know. Well, let it go at that! Let them have their own way about it! Haven't the ignorant, narrow-minded curs reviled me as an enemy of the people?—and haven't they been ready to tear the clothes off my back too?

Morten Kri And broken all your windows to pieces!

Dr Stockmann And then there is my duty to my family. I must talk it over with Katherine, she is great on those things

Morten Knil That is right, be guided by a reasonable woman's advice.

Dr Stockmann (advancing towards him) To think you could do such a preposterous thing! Risking Katherine's money in this way, and putting me in such a horribly painful dilemma! When I look at you, I think I see the devil himself—

Morten Knil, Then I had better go. But I must have an answer from you before two o'clock:—yes or no. If it is no, the shares go to a charity, and that this very day.

Dr. Stockmann And what does Katherine get?

Morten Knil Not a halfpenny. (*The door leading to the hall opens, and HOVSTAD and ASLAKSEN make their appearance*) Look at those two!

Dr. Stockmann (staring at them) What the devil!—have you actually the face to come into my house?

Hovstad Certainly.

Aslakser We have something to say to you, you see.

Morten Knil (in a whisper) Yes or no—before two o'clock.

Aslakser (glancing at HOVSTAD) Aha! (*MORTEN KNIL goes out*)

Dr Stockmann Well, what do you want with me? Be brief.

Hovstad. I can quite understand that you are annoyed with us for our attitude at the meeting yesterday—

Dr Stockmann. Attitude, do you call it? Yes, it was a charming attitude! I call it weak, womanish—damnable shameful!

Hovstad Call it what you like, we could not do otherwise.

Dr Stockmann. You *dared* not do otherwise—isn't that it?

Hovstad. Well, if you like to put it that way.

Aslakser. But why did you not let us have word of it beforehand?—just a hint to Mr Hovstad or to me?

Dr Stockmann A hint? Of what?

Aslaksen Of what was behind it all

Dr Stockmann I don't understand you in the least

Aslaksen (with a confidential nod) Oh yes, you do,
Dr Stockmann

Hovstad It is no good making a mystery of it any longer

Dr Stockmann (looking first at one of them and then at the other) What the devil do you both mean?

Aslaksen May I ask if your father-in-law is not going round the town buying up all the shares in the Baths?

Dr Stockmann Yes, he has been buying Baths shares to-day, but—

Aslaksen It would have been more prudent to get some one else to do it—some one less nearly related to you

Hovstad And you should not have let your name appear in the affair. There was no need for anyone to know that the attack on the Baths came from you. You ought to have consulted me, *Dr Stockmann*

Dr Stockmann (looks in front of him, then a light seems to dawn on him and he says in amazement) Are such things conceivable? Are such things possible?

Aslaksen (with a smile) Evidently they are. But it is better to use a little *finesse*, you know

Hovstad And it is much better to have several persons in a thing of that sort, because the responsibility of each individual is lessened, when there are others with him.

Dr Stockmann (composedly) Come to the point, gentlemen. What do you want?

Aslaksen Perhaps Mr Hovstad had better—

Hovstad No, you tell him, *Aslaksen*

Aslaksen Well, the fact is that, now we know the bearings of the whole affair, we think we might venture to put the "People's Messenger" at your disposal

Dr Stockmann Do you dare do that now? What about public opinion? Are you not afraid of a storm breaking upon our heads?

Hovstad We will try to weather it.

Aslaksen And you must be ready to go off quickly on a new tack, Doctor. As soon as your invective has done its work—

Dr. Stockmann Do you mean, as soon as my father-in-law and I have got hold of the shares at a low figure?

Hovstad Your reasons for wishing to get the control of the Baths are mainly scientific, I take it.

Dr. Stockmann Of course, it was for scientific reasons that I persuaded the old "Badger" to stand in with me in the matter. So we will tinker at the conduit-pipes a little, and dig up a little bit of the shore, and it shan't cost the town a sixpence. That will be all right—eh?

Hovstad I think so—if you have the "People's Messenger" behind you.

Aslaksen The Press is a power in a free community, Doctor.

Dr. Stockmann Quite so. And so is public opinion. And you, Mr. Aslaksen—I suppose you will be answerable for the Householders' Association?

Aslaksen Yes, and for the Temperance Society. You may rely on that.

Dr. Stockmann But, gentlemen—I really am ashamed to ask the question—but, what return do you—?

Hovstad We should prefer to help you without any return whatever, believe me. But the "People's Messenger" is in rather a shaky condition; it doesn't go really well; and I should be very unwilling to suspend the paper now, when there is so much work to do here in the political way.

Dr. Stockmann Quite so; that would be a great trial to such a friend of the people as you are. (*Flares up.*) But I am an enemy of the people, remember! (*Walks about the room.*) Where have I put my stick? Where the devil is my stick?

Hovstad What's that?

Aslaksen Surely you never mean—?

Dr. Stockmann (*standing still*) And suppose I don't

give you a single penny of all I get out of it? Money is not very easy to get out of us rich folk, please to remember!

Hovstad And you please to remember that this affair of the shares can be represented in two ways!

Dr Stockmann Yes, and you are just the man to do it. If I don't come to the rescue of the "People's Messenger," you will certainly take an evil view of the affair, you will hunt me down, I can well imagine—pursue me—try to throttle me as a dog does a hare

Hovstad It is a natural law, every animal must fight for its own livelihood

Aslaksen And get its food where it can, you know

Dr Stockmann (*walking about the room*) Then you go and look for yours in the gutter, because I am going to show you which is the strongest animal of us three! (*Finds an umbrella and brandishes it above his head*) Ah, now—!

Hovstad You are surely not going to use violence!

Aslaksen Take care what you are doing with that umbrella

Dr Stockmann Out of the window with you, Mr. Hovstad!

Hovstad (*edging to the door*) Are you quite mad!

Dr Stockmann Out of the window, Mr Aslaksen! Jump, I tell you! You will have to do it, sooner or later

Aslaksen (*running round the writing-table*) Moderation, Doctor—I am a delicate man—I can stand so little—(*calls out*) help, help!

(*MRS STOCKMANN, PETRA and HORSTER come in from the sitting-room*)

Mrs. Stockmann Good gracious, Thomas! What is happening?

Dr Stockmann (*brandishing the umbrella*) Jump out, I tell you! Out into the gutter!

Hovstad An assault on an unoffending man! I call you to witness, Captain Horster. (*Hurries out through the hall.*)

Aslaksen (irresolutely) If only I knew the way about here— (*Steals out through the sitting-room*)

Mrs Stockmann (holding her husband back) Control yourself, Thomas!

Dr Stockmann (throwing down the umbrella) Upon my soul, they have escaped after all.

Mrs Stockmann What did they want you to do?

Dr Stockmann I will tell you later on, I have something else to think about now (*Goes to the table and writes something on a calling-card*) Look there, Katherine, what is written there?

Mrs Stockmann Three big Noes, what does that mean

Dr Stockmann I will tell you that too, later on (*Holds out the card to PETRA*) There, Petra, tell sooty-face to run over to the "Badger's" with that, as quick as she can Hurry up! (*PETRA takes the card and goes out to the hall*)

Dr Stockmann Well, I think I have had a visit from every one of the devil's messengers to-day! But now I am going to sharpen my pen till they can feel its point, I shall dip it in venom and gall, I shall hurl my ink-pot at their heads!

Mrs Stockmann Yes, but we are going away, you know, Thomas

(*PETRA comes back*)

Dr Stockmann Well?

Petra She has gone with it

Dr Stockmann Good—Going away, did you say? No, I'll be hanged if we are going away! We are going to stay where we are, Katherine!

Petra Stay here?

Mrs Stockmann Here, in the town?

Dr Stockmann Yes, here This is the field of battle—this is where the fight will be This is where I shall triumph! As soon as I have had my trousers sewn up I shall go out and look for another house We must have a roof over our heads for the winter.

Horster That you shall have in my house

Dr Stockmann Can I?

Horster Yes, quite well I have plenty of room, and I am almost never at home

Mrs Stockmann How good of you, Captain Horster!

Petra Thank you!

Dr Stockmann (*grasping his hand*) Thank you, thank you! That is one trouble over! Now I can set to work in earnest at once There is an endless amount of things to look through here, Katherine! Luckily I shall have all my time at my disposal, because I have been dismissed from the Baths, you know

Mrs Stockmann (*with a sigh*) Oh yes, I expected that.

Dr Stockmann And they want to take my practice away from me too. Let them! I have got the poor people to fall back upon, anyway—those that don't pay anything, and, after all, they need me most, too But, by Jove, they will have to listen to me, I shall preach to them in season and out of season, as it says somewhere

Mrs Stockmann But, dear Thomas, I should have thought events had showed you what use it is to preach

Dr Stockmann You are really ridiculous, Katherine Do you want me to let myself be beaten off the field by public opinion and the compact majority and all that devilry? No, thank you! And what I want to do is so simple and clear and straightforward I only want to drum into the heads of these curs the fact that the liberals are the most insidious enemies of freedom—that party programmes strangle every young and vigorous truth—that considerations of expediency turn morality and justice upside down—and that they will end by making life here unbearable Don't you think, Captain Horster, that I ought to be able to make people understand that?

Horster Very likely, I don't know much about such things myself

Dr Stockmann Well, look here—I will explain! It is the party leaders that must be exterminated A party leader is like a wolf, you see—like a voracious wolf.

He requires a certain number of smaller victims to prey upon every year, if he is to live. Just look at Hovstad and Aslaksen! How many smaller victims have they not put an end to—or at any rate maimed and mangled until they are fit for nothing except to be householders or subscribers to the “People’s Messenger”! (*Sits down on the edge of the table*) Come here, Katherine—look how beautifully the sun shines to-day! And this lovely spring air I am drinking in!

Mrs Stockmann Yes, if only we could live on sunshine and spring air, Thomas

Dr Stockmann Oh, you will have to pinch and save a bit—then we shall get along. That gives me very little concern. What is much worse is, that I know of no one who is liberal-minded and high-minded enough to venture to take up my work after me.

Petra Don’t think about that, father, you have plenty of time before you—Hullo, here are the boys already!

(*EJLIF and MORTEN come in from the sitting-room*)

Mrs Stockmann Have you got a holiday?

Morten No, but we were fighting with the other boys between lessons—

Ejlif That isn’t true, it was the other boys were fighting with us.

Morten Well, and then Mr Rörbund said we had better stay at home for a day or two.

Dr Stockmann (*snapping his fingers and getting up from the table*) I have it! I have it, by Jove! You shall never set foot in the school again!

The Boys No more school!

Mrs Stockmann But, Thomas—

Dr Stockmann Never, I say. I will educate you myself, that is to say, you shan’t learn a blessed thing—

Morten Hooray!

Dr Stockmann —but I will make liberal-minded and high-minded men of you. You must help me with that, Petra.

Petra Yes, father, you may be sure I will,

Dr Stockmann And my school shall be in the room where they insulted me and called me an enemy of the people. But we are too few as we are, I must have at least twelve boys to begin with.

Mrs Stockmann. You will certainly never get them in this town.

Dr Stockmann. We shall. (*To the boys*) Don't you know any street urchins—regular ragamuffins—?

Morten Yes, father, I know lots!

Dr Stockmann That's capital! Bring me some specimens of them. I am going to experiment with curs, just for once, there may be some exceptional heads amongst them.

Morten And what are we going to do, when you have made liberal-minded and high-minded men of us?

Dr Stockmann Then you shall drive all the wolves out of the country, my boys!

(*EJLIF looks rather doubtful about it, MORTEN jumps about crying "Hurrah!"*)

Mrs Stockmann Let us hope it won't be the wolves that will drive you out of the country, Thomas.

Dr Stockmann Are you out of your mind, Katherine? Drive me out! Now—when I am the strongest man in the town!

Mrs Stockmann. The strongest—now?

Dr Stockmann Yes, and I will go so far as to say that now I am the strongest man in the whole world.

Morten I say!

Dr Stockmann (*lowering his voice*) Hush! You mustn't say anything about it yet, but I have made a great discovery.

Mrs Stockmann Another one?

Dr Stockmann Yes. (*Gathers them round him, and says confidentially*) It is this, let me tell you—that the strongest man in the world is he who stands most alone.

Mrs Stockmann (*smiling and shaking her head*) Oh, Thomas, Thomas!

Petra (*encouragingly, as she grasps her father's hands*). Father!

WASH - THE
TEMPLE PRESS
LETCHLOR - H
COEX - SRT - H

EVERYMAN'S LIBRARY

By ERNEST RHYS

VICTOR HUGO said a Library was "an act of faith," and some unknown essayist spoke of one so beautiful, so perfect, so harmonious in all its parts, that he who made it was smitten with a passion. In that faith the promoters of Everyman's Library planned it out originally on a large scale, and their idea in so doing was to make it conform as far as possible to a perfect scheme. However, perfection is a thing to be aimed at and not to be achieved in this difficult world, and since the first volumes appeared, now several years ago, there have been many interruptions. A great war has come and gone, and even the City of Books has felt something like a world commotion. Only in recent years is the series getting back into its old stride and looking forward to complete its original scheme of a Thousand Volumes. One of the practical expedients in that original plan was to divide the volumes into sections, as Biography, Fiction, History, Belles Lettres, Poetry, Romance, and so forth, with a compartment for young people, and last, and not least, one of Reference Books. Beside the dictionaries and encyclopædias to be expected in that section, there was a special set of literary and historical atlases. One of these atlases dealing with Europe, we may recall, was directly affected by the disturbance of frontiers during the war, and the maps had to be completely revised in consequence, so as to chart

the New Europe which we hope will now preserve its peace under the auspices of the League of Nations set up at Geneva

That is only one small item, however, in a library list which runs already to the final centuries of the Thousand. The largest slice of this huge provision is, as a matter of course, given to the tyrannous demands of fiction. But in carrying out the scheme, publishers and editors contrived to keep in mind that books, like men and women, have their elective affinities. The present volume, for instance, will be found to have its companion books, both in the same section and even more significantly in other sections. With that idea too, novels like Walter Scott's *Ivanhoe* and *Fortunes of Nigel*, Lytton's *Harold* and Dickens's *Tale of Two Cities*, have been used as pioneers of history and treated as a sort of holiday history books. For in our day history is tending to grow more documentary and less literary, and "the historian who is a stylist," as one of our contributors, the late Thomas Seccombe, said, "will soon be regarded as a kind of Pœnixa." But in this special department of Everyman's Library we have been eclectic enough to choose our history men from every school in turn. We have Grote, Gibbon, Finlay, Macaulay, Motley, Prescott. We have among earlier books the Venerable Bede and the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle, have completed a Livy in an admirable new translation by Canon Roberts, while Cæsar, Tacitus, Thucydides and Herodotus are not forgotten.

"You only, O Books," said Richard de Bury, "are liberal and independent, you give to all who ask." The delightful variety, the wisdom and the wit which are at the disposal of Everyman in his own library may well, at times, seem to him a little embarrassing. He may turn to Dick Steele in *The Spectator* and learn how Cleomira dances, when the elegance of her motion is unimaginable and "her eyes are chastised with the simplicity and innocence of her thoughts." He may turn to Plato's Phædrus

and read how every soul is divided into three parts (like Cæsar's Gaul) He may turn to the finest critic of Victorian times, Matthew Arnold, and find in his essay on Maurice de Guérin the perfect key to what is there called the "magical power of poetry" It is Shakespeare, with his

"daffodils
That come before the swallow dares, and take
The winds of March with beauty,"

it is Wordsworth, with his

"voice heard
In spring-time from the cuckoo bird,
Breaking the silence of the seas
Among the farthest Hebrides,"

or Keats, with his

" moving waters at their priest-like task
Of cold ablution round Earth's human shores "

William Hazlitt's "Table Talk," among the volumes of *Essays*, may help to show the relationship of one author to another, which is another form of the Friendship of Books His incomparable essay in that volume, "On Going a Journey," forms a capital prelude to Coleridge's "Biographia Literaria" and to his and Wordsworth's poems In the same way one may turn to the review of Moore's *Life of Byron* in Macaulay's *Essays* as a prelude to the three volumes of Byron's own poems, remembering that the poet whom Europe loved more than England did was as Macaulay said "the beginning, the middle and the end of all his own poetry" This brings us to the provoking reflection that it is the obvious authors and the books most easy to reprint which have been the signal successes out of the many hundreds in the series, for Everyman is distinctly proverbial in his tastes He likes best of all an old author who has worn well or

a comparatively new author who has gained something like newspaper notoriety In attempting to lead him on from the good books that are known to those that are less known, the publishers may have at times been too adventurous The late *Chief* himself was much more than an ordinary book-producer in this critical enterprise He threw himself into it with the zeal of a book-lover and indeed of one who, like Milton, thought that books might be as alive and productive as dragons' teeth, which, being "sown up and down the land, might chance to spring up armed men "

Mr Pepys in his *Diary* writes about some of his books, "which are come home gilt on the backs, very handsome to the eye " The pleasure he took in them is that which Everyman may take in the gilt backs of his favourite books in his own Library, which after all he has helped to make good and lasting

EVERYMAN'S LIBRARY

A LIST OF THE 850 VOLUMES ARRANGED UNDER AUTHORS

Anonymous works are given under titles

Anthologies, Dictionaries, etc. are arranged at the end of the list

- | | |
|--|--|
| Abbott's Roilo at Worl etc, 275 | Bacon's Essays, 10 |
| Addison's Spectator 161-7 | „ Advancement of Learning, 719 |
| Æschylus's Lyrical Dramas 62 | Barchot's Literary Studies 520 521 |
| Æsop's and Other Fables 657 | Baker's (Sir S. W.) Cast up by the Sea, 539 |
| Aimard's The Indian Scout, 428 | Ballantyno's Coral Island, 245 |
| Ainsworth's Tower of London, 100 | „ Martin Rattler, 246 |
| „ Old St. Paul's 522 | „ Ungava, 276 |
| „ Windsor Castle, 709 | Balzac's Wild Ass's Skin 26 |
| „ The Admirable Crichton, 801 | „ Eugenio Grandet, 169 |
| A Kempis's Imitation of Christ 484 | „ Old Goriot 170 |
| Alcott's Little Women, and Good Wives 248 | „ Athelst's Mass, etc 220 |
| „ Little Men, 512 | „ Christ in Flanders, etc, 284 |
| Alpine Club Peaks, Passes and Glaciers 778 | „ The Chouans, 285 |
| Andersen's Fairy Tales 4 | „ Quest of the Absolute 286 |
| „ More Fairy Tales, 822 | „ Cat and Ratchet etc, 349 |
| Anglo Saxon Chronicle, 624 | „ Catherine de Medici, 419 |
| Anson's Voyages 510 | „ Cousin Pons, 463 |
| Aristophanes Acharnians, etc, 344 | „ The Country Doctor, 530 |
| „ Frogs etc 516 | „ Rise and Fall of Cæsar Blotteau, 596 |
| Aristotle's Nicomachean Ethics, 547 | „ Lost Illusions 656 |
| „ Politics 605 | „ The Country Parson, 686 |
| Armour's Fall of the Nibelungs, 312 | „ Ursule Mirouet 733 |
| Arnold's (Matthew) Essays 115 | Barbusse's Under Fire, 798 |
| „ Poems, 334 | Barca's (Mme C de la) Life in Mexico, 664 |
| „ Study of Celtic Literature, etc 458 | Bates's Naturalist on the Amazon, 446 |
| Aucassin and Nicolette, 497 | Beaumont and Fletcher's Selected Plays, 506 |
| Augustinus (Saint) Confessions, 200 | Beaumont's (Mary) Joan Seaton, 597 |
| Aurelius's (Marcus) Meditations 9 | Bedo's Ecclesiastical History 479 |
| Austen's (Jane) Sense and Sensibility, 21 | Belt's Naturalist in Nicaragua, 561 |
| „ Pride and Prejudice, 22 | Berkley's (Bishop) Principles of Human Knowledge, New Theory of Vision etc 483 |
| „ Mansfield Park, 23 | Berlioz (Hector) Life of 602 |
| „ Emma, 24 | |
| „ Northanger Abbey and Persuasion, 25 | |

- Binns's Life of Abraham Lincoln, 783
 Björnson's Plays 625 696
 Blackmore's Lorna Doone, 304
 " Springhaven, 350
 Blackwell's Pioneer Work for
 Women, 667
 Blake's Poems and Prophecies 792
 Boccaccio's Decameron 845, 846
 Bechme's The Signature of All
 Things etc., 569
 Bonaventura's The Little Flowers
 The Life of St. Francis, etc., 485
 Borrow's Wild Wales, 49
 " Lavongro 119
 " Romany Rye 120
 " Biblio in Spain, 151
 " Gypsies in Spain, 697
 Boswell's Life of Johnson 1, 2
 " Tour to the Hebrides, 387
 Boul's Asgard and Norse Heroes,
 689
 Boyle's The Scoptical Chymist, 559
 Bright's (John) Speeches, 252
 Brontë's (A.) The Tenant of Wild-
 fell Hall and Agnes Grey, 685
 Brontë's (C.) Jane Eyre 237
 " Shirley, 235
 " Villette, 31
 " The Professor, 417
 Brontë's (E.) Wuthering Heights,
 243
 Brown's (Dr. John) Rab and His
 Friends, etc., 116
 Brown's (Frances) Grannie's Won-
 derful Chair 112
 Browne's (Sir Thos.) Religio Mediol,
 etc 92
 Browning's Poems, 1833-44, 41
 " 1844-64 42
 " The Ring and the Book,
 502
 Buchanan's Life and Adventures
 of Audubon 601
 Bulfinch's The Age of Fable, 472
 " Legends of Charlemagne,
 556
 Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress 204
 " Grace Abounding and
 Mr Badman, 315
 Burke's American Speeches and
 Letters 340
 " Reflections on the French
 Revolution etc., 460
 Burnet's History of His Own Times
 Burney's Evelina 352 185
 Burns's Poems and Songs, 94
 Burton's East Africa, 500
 Butler's Analogy of Religion, 90
 Buxton's Memoirs 773
 Byron's Complete Poetical and
 Dramatic Works 486-8
 Cæsar's Gallic War etc., 702
 Calderon's Plays 819
 Canton's Child's Book of Saints 61
 Canton's Invisible Playmate, etc 566
 Carlyle's French Revolution, 31 32
 " Letters, etc., of Crom-
 well, 266-8
 " Sartor Resartus, 278
 " Past and Present, 608
 " Essays, 703, 704
 Carroll's (Lewis) Alice in Wonder-
 land etc 836
 Castiglione's The Courtier 807
 Cellini's Autobiography 51
 Cervantes' Don Quixote 385 386
 Chaucer's Canterbury Tales 307
 Chesterfield's Letters to his Son 823
 Chrétien de Troyes's Arthurian
 Romances 698
 Gibbon's Apology for his Life 668
 Cicero's Select Letters and Ora-
 tions, 345
 Clarke's Tales from Chaucer, 537
 " Shakespeare's Heroines 109-11
 Cobbett's Rural Rides, 638, 639
 Coleridge's Biographia, 11
 " Golden Book of Poetry, 43
 " Lectures on Shakespeare, 162
 Collins's Woman in White, 464
 Colodi's Pinocchio, 538
 Converse's Long Will 328
 Cook's (Captain) Voyages, 99
 Cooper's The Deerslayer, 77
 " The Pathfinder, 78
 " Last of the Mohicans, 79
 " The Pioneer, 171
 " The Prairie, 172
 Cowper's Letters, 774
 Cox's Tales of Ancient Greece 721
 Craik's Manual of English Litera-
 ture, 346
 Craik (Mrs.) See Mulock
 Creasy's Fifteen Decisive Battles 300
 Crèvecoeur's Letters from an Amer-
 ican Farmer, 640
 Curtis's Prue and I, and Lotus, 418
 Dana's Two Years Before the
 Mast, 538
 Dante's Divine Comedy, 308
 Darwin's Origin of Species 811
 " Voyage of the Beagle 104
 Dasent's Story of Burnt Njal 558
 Daudet's Tartarin of Tarascon, 423
 Defoe's Robinson Crusoe 59
 " Captain Singleton, 74
 " Memoirs of a Cavalier, 283
 " Journal of Plague 289
 " Tour through England and
 Wales 820 821
 " Moll Flanders 837
 De Joinville's Memoirs of the
 Crusades 333
 Demosthenes' Select Orations 516
 Dennis's Cities and Cemeteries of
 Etruria 183, 184

- De Quincey's Lako Poets, 163
 „ Opium Eater 223
 „ English Mall Coach, etc, 609
- De Rotz (Cardinal), Memoirs of, 735, 736
- De-cartes' Discourse on Method, 570
- Dickens's Barnaby Rudge, 76
 „ Tale of Two Cities, 102
 „ Old Curiosity Shop, 173
 „ Oliver Twist, 233
 „ Great Expectations 234
 „ Pickwick Papers, 235
 „ Bleak House, 236
 „ Sketches by Boz 237
 „ Nicholas Nickleby 238
 „ Christmas Books, 239
 „ Dombey and Son 240
 „ Martin Chuzzlewit, 241
 „ David Copperfield, 242
 „ American Notes 290
 „ Child's History of Eng- land 291
 „ Hard Times, 292
 „ Little Dorrit 293
 „ Our Mutual Friend, 294
 „ Christmas Stories 414
 „ Uncommercial Traveller, 536
 „ Edwin Drood 725
 „ Reprinted Pieces, 744
- Daniel's Coningsby 535
- Dodge's Hans Brinker, 620
- Dostoleffsky's Crime and Punish- ment, 501
 „ The House of the Dead, 533
 „ Letters from the Underworld, etc, 654
 „ The Idiot 682
 „ Poor Folk, and the Gambler, 711
 „ The Brothers Karamazov, 802, 803
- Dowden's Life of R. Browning, 701
- Dryden's Dramatic Essays, 568
- Dufferin's Letters from High Lat- itudes 499
- Dumas The Three Musketeers, 81
 „ The Black Tulip, 174
 „ Twenty Years After, 175
 „ Marguerite de Valois, 326
 „ The Count of Monte Cristo, 393, 394
 „ The Forty Five, 420
 „ Chicot the Jester 421
 „ Vicomte de Bragelonne 593-5
 „ Le Chevalier de Maison Rouge 614
- Duray's Heroes of England, 471
 „ History of France, 737, 738
- Edgar's Cressy and Poitiers, 17
 „ Runnymede and Lincoln Fair 320
- Edgeworth's Castle Rackrent, etc, 410
- Eighteenth Century Plays, 818
- Eliot's Adam Bede, 27
 „ Silas Marner, 121
 „ Romola, 231
 „ Mill on the Floss, 325
 „ Felix Holt 353
 „ Scenes of Clerical Life, 468
- Elyot's Gouvernour, 227
- Emerson's Essays, 12
 „ Representative Men, 279
 „ Nature, Conduct of Life, etc, 322
 „ Society and Solitude, etc, 567
 „ Poems, 715
- Epiotetus's Moral Discourses, 401
- Erekmann Chatrian's The Con- script and Water loo, 354
 „ Story of a Peasant, 706, 707
- Euripides' Plays, 65, 271
- Evans's Holy Graal, 415
- Facyl's Diary 220 221
- Everyman and other Interludes, 381
- Ewing's (Mrs.) Mrs Overthoway's Remembrances etc 730
 „ Jackanapes Daddy Darwin's Dovecot and The Story of a Short Life, 731
- Faraday's Experimental Researches in Electricity 576
- Ferrier's (Susan) Marriage 816
- Fielding's Tom Jones 355, 356
 Joseph Andrews, 467
- Finlay's Byzantine Empire 33
 „ Greece under the Romans, 185
- Flaubert's Madame Bovary, 808
- Fletcher's (Beaumont and) Selected Plays, 506
- Ford's Gatherings from Spain 152
- Forster's Life of Dickens 751, 782
- Fox's (George) Journal, 754
- Fox's (Charles James) Selected Speeches, 759
- Francis's (Saint), The Little Flowers etc, 485
- Franklin's Journey to the Polar Sea, 447
- Freeman's Old English History for Children 540
- French Mediaeval Romances, 557
- Froissart's Chronicles, 57
- Froude's Short Studies, 13 705
 „ Henry VIII 372-4
 „ Edward VI, 375
 „ Mary Tudor 477
 „ History of Queen Eliza- beth's Reign, 583-7

- Froude's Life of Benjamin Disraeli, Lord Beaconsfield 666
 Galt's Annals of the Parish, 427
 Galton's Inquiries into Human Faculty, 263
 Gaskell's Cranford 87
 " Life of Charlotte Brontë, 318
 " Sylvia's Lovers, 521
 " Mary Barton, 598
 " Cousin Phillis, etc 615
 " North and South 680
 Gatty's Parables from Nature 158
 Geoffrey of Monmouth's Histories of the Kings of Britain 577
 George's Progress and Poverty, 560
 Gibbon's Roman Empire, 434-6, 474-6
 " Autobiography, 511
 Gillman's Literary Portraits, 348
 Giraldus Cambrensis, Wales, 272
 Glend's Life of Wellington 341
 " The Subaltern, 708
 Goethe's Faust, 325
 " Wilhelm Meister, 599, 600
 Gogol's Dead Souls 726
 " Taras Bulba 740
 Goldsmith's Vicar of Wakefield, 295
 " Poems and Plays 415
 Gold's Through Russia, 741
 Gotthelf's Ullie the Farm Servant, 228
 Gray's Poems and Letters, 628
 Green's Short History of the English People 727 728 The cloth edition is in 2 vols All other editions are in 1 vol.
 Grettir Saga 699
 Grimm's Fairy Tales 56
 Grote's History of Greece, 186-197
 Guest's (Lady) Mabonogion, 97
 Hahnemann's The Organon of the Rational Art of Healing 663
 Halluc's Voyages 264 265, 313 314 338, 339, 388 389
 Hansen's Constitutional History, 621-3
 Hamilton's The Federalist 519
 Harte's Luck of Roaring Camp 681
 Harvey's Circulation of Blood, 262
 Hawthorne's Wonder Book, 5
 " The Scarlet Letter, 122
 " House of Seven Gables 176
 " The Marble Faun 421
 " Twice Told Tales 531
 " Blithedale Romance 592
 Hazlitt's Characters of Shakespeare's Plays, 65
 " Table Talk, 321
 " Lectures 411
 Hazlitt's Spirit of the Age and Lectures on English Poets, 459
 " Plain Speaker 814
 Hebbel's Plays 694
 Heimskringla the Olaf Sagas, 717
 " Sagas of the Norse Kings 847
 Helps' (Sir Arthur) Life of Columbus, 332
 Herbert's Temple 309
 Herodotus, 405, 406
 Herrick's Hesperides, 310
 Holbein's Leviathan 691
 Holinshed's Chronicle, 800
 Holmes's Life of Mozart, 564
 Holmes's (O W) Autocrat 66
 " Prof. 67
 " Poet, 63
 Homer's "Iliad 453
 " Odyssey 454
 Hooker's Ecclesiastical Polity, 201 202
 Horace's Complete Poetical Works, 515
 Houston's Life and Letters of Keats, 801
 Howard's (John) State of the Prisons 875
 Hughes's Tom Brown's Schooldays, 58
 Hugo's (Victor) Les Misérables, 363, 364
 " Notre Dame, 422
 " Teller of the Sea 509
 Hume's Treatise of Human Nature etc 548 549
 Hunt's (Leigh) Selected Essays, 829
 Hutchinson's (Col) Memoirs 317
 Huxley's Man's Place in Nature 47
 " Select Lectures and Lay Sermons 498
 Ibsen's The Doll's House, etc 494
 " Ghosts, etc 552
 " Pretender Pillars of Society
 " Pomeroyholm 659
 " Brand, 716
 " Lady Inger, etc 729
 " Per Gynt 747
 Ingelorm's Mop-a-the-Fairy, 619
 Irving's Sketch Book, 117
 " Conquest of Granada, 478
 " Life of Mahomet, 513
 James's (P R.) Pichellen 357
 James (Wm) Selections from, 739
 J. Series (Richard) Berio 850
 Johnson's (Dr) Lives of the Poets, 770-1
 Johnson's (Ben) Plays 430 439
 Josephus's Wars of the Jews, 712
 Kalidasa's Shakuntala 629
 Keats's Poems, 191

- Zebbo's Christian Year 690
 Zing's Life of Mazzini 562
 Zinglake's Eothen 337
 Zingaloy's (Chas.) Westward Ho! 20
 " Heroes, 113
 " Hyppatia, 230
 " Water Babies, and Glaucus, 277
 " Hereward the Wake, 206
 " Alton Locke, 462
 " Yeast 611
 " Madam How and Lady Why, 777
 Poems, 793
 Zingaloy's (Henry) Ravenshoe, 28
 " Geoffrey Hamlyn, 410
 Kingston's Peter the Whaler, 6
 " Three Midshipmen, 7
 Kirby's Kalevala, 259-60
 Koran, 380
 Lamb's Tales from Shakespeare, 8
 " Essays of Elia, 11
 " Letters 342, 343
 Lano's Modern Egyptians, 315
 Langland's Piers Plowman, 571
 Latimer's Sermons, 40
 Law's Serious Call, 91
 Lavamons (Wace and) Arthurian
 Chronicles, 578
 Lear (Edward) See under Antho-
 logies
 Le Sage's Gil Blas, 437 138
 Leslie's Memoirs of John Constable,
 563
 Lessing's Laocoon, etc 843
 Lover's Harry Lorrequer 177
 Lowes' Life of Goethe, 269
 Lincoln's Speeches etc 206
 Livy's History of Rome, 603, 609
 670, 749, 755, 756
 Locke's Civil Government 751
 Lockhart's Life of Napoleon 3
 " Life of Scott, 55
 " Life of Burns 156
 Longfellow's Poems 382
 Lounrott's Kalevala, 259 260
 Lover's Handy Andy, 178
 Lowell's Among My Books, 607
 Lucretius's Of the Nature of Things,
 750
 Lützow's History of Bohemia, 432
 Lyell's Antiquity of Man, 709
 Lytton's Harold, 15
 " Last of the Barons, 18
 " Last Days of Pompeii, 80
 " Pilgrims of the Rhine, 399
 " Rienzi, 532
 Macaulay's England, 34-6
 " Essays, 225 226
 " Speeches on Politics etc 399
 " Miscellaneous Essays, 439
 MacDonald's Sir Gibbie, 678
 Phantastes, 732
 Machiavelli's Prince 280
 Morenc 376
 Maine's Ancient Law, 731
 Malory's Le Morte D'Arthur, 45, 46
 Malthus on the Principles of
 Population 692, 693
 Mandeville's Travels 812
 Manning's Sir Thomas More 19
 " Mary Powell, and De-
 " borah's Diary, 324
 Marlowe's Plays and Poems 383
 Marryat's Mr Midshipman Easy 82
 " Little Savage, 159
 " Masterman Ready, 160
 " Peter Simple, 232
 " Children of New Forest,
 217
 " Percival Keene, 358
 " Settlers in Canada, 370
 " King's Own, 589
 " Jacob Faithful 618
 Martineau's Fables on the Fjords, 429
 Martinego Cesareo's Folk Lore
 and other Essays, 673
 Marx's Capital, 848, 849
 Maurice's Kingdom of Christ, 146 7
 Mazzini's Duties of Man, etc., 224
 Melville's Moby Dick, 179
 " Typee, 180
 " Omoo 297
 Mérimée's Carmen, etc., 834
 Merivale's History of Rome, 433
 Mickiewicz's Pan Tadeusz, 842
 Mignet's French Revolution 713
 Mill's Utilitarianism, Liberty, Re-
 presentative Government
 482
 " Rights of Woman 825
 Miller's Old Red Sandstone 193
 Milman's History of the Jews, 377,
 378
 Milton's Arcopagitica and other
 Prose Works, 795
 Poems, 384
 Molière's Comedies, 830-1
 Mommsen's History of Rome 542-5
 Montagu's (Lady) Letters 69
 Montaigne's Essays, 440-2
 More's Utopia and Dialogue of
 Comfort against Tribulation 461
 Morier's Hajji Baba, 679
 Morris's (Wm.) Early Romances,
 261
 " Life and Death of Jason, 575
 Moite D'Arthur Romances, 634
 Motley's Dutch Republic 86-8
 Mulock's John Halifax, 123
 Neale's Fall of Constantinople, 655
 Newcastle's (Margaret, Duchess of)
 Life of the First Duke of New-
 castle, etc., 722
 Newman's Apologia Pro Vita Sua,
 636

- Newman's On the Scope and Nature of University Education, and a Paper on Christianity and Scientific Investigation 723
- Oliphant's Salem Chapel, 244
- Omar Khayyam 819
- Osborne (Dorothy) Letters of, 674
- Owen's (Robert) A New View of Society, etc., 799
- Paine's Rights of Man, 718
- Palgrave's Golden Treasury 96
- Paltock's Peter Wilkins, 676
- Paul's (Mungo) Travels, 205
- Parkman's Conspiracy of Pontiac, 302 303
- Paston Letters, 752 753
- Peacock's Headlong Hall, 327
- Penn's The Peace of Europe Some Fruits of Solitude, etc., 724
- Poppy's Diary, 53, 54
- Percy's Reliques, 148 149
- Pitt's Orations, 145
- Plato's Republic 64
- " Dialogues, 456, 457
- Plutarch's Lives 407-409
- " Moralia, 565
- Poe's Tales of Mystery and Imagination 336
- " Poems and Essays, 791
- Polo's (Marco) Travels, 306
- Pope's Complete Poetical Works, 760
- Prescott's Conquest of Peru 301
- " Conquest of Mexico 397, 398
- Prevost's Manon Lescaut etc., 834
- Procter's Legends and Lyrics 150
- Rabelais's Gargantua and Pantagruel 826, 827
- Ramayana and Mahabharata 403
- Reade's The Cloister and the Hearth 29
- " Peg Woffington, 299
- Reid's (Mayne) Boy Hunters of the Mississippi, 582
- " The Boy Slaves 797
- Renan's Life of Jesus, 805
- Reynold's Discourses, 118
- Ricardo's Principles of Political Economy and Taxation, 590
- Richardson's Pamela 683 684
- Roberts (Morley) Western Avernus, 762
- Robertson's Religion and Life 37
- " Christian Doctrine, 38
- " Bible Subjects 39
- Robinson's (Wade) Sermons, 637
- Roget's Thesaurus, 630 631
- Rossetti's (D. G.) Poems, 627
- Rousseau's Emile 518
- " Social Contract and other Essays, 660
- Ruskin's Seven Lamps of Architecture 207
- " Modern Painters, 208-212
- " Stones of Venice, 213-215
- " Unto this Last, etc., 216
- " Elements of Drawing, etc., 217
- " Pre-Raphaelitism, etc., 218
- " Sesame and Lillies, 219
- " Ethics of the Dust 282
- " Crown of Wild Olive, and Cestus of Aglala, 323
- " Time and Tide, etc., 450
- " The Two Boyhoods, 683
- Russell's Life of Gladstone, 661
- Sand's (George) The Devil's Pool, and François the Waif 534
- Scheffel's Ekkehard, 529
- Scott's (M.) Tom Cringle's Log, 710
- Scott's (Sir W.) Ivanhoe, 16
- " Fortunes of Nigel, 71
- " Woodstock 72
- " Waverley 75
- " The Abbot, 124
- " Anne of Geierstein 125
- " The Antiquary 126
- " Highland Widow, and Betrothed 127
- " Black Dwarf, Legend of Montrose, 128
- " Bride of Lammermoor, 129
- " Castle Dangerous, Surgeon's Daughter 130
- " Robert of Paris 131
- " Fair Maid of Perth 132
- " Guy Rannering, 133
- " Heart of Midlothian, 134
- " Kenilworth 135
- " The Monastery 136
- " Old Mortality 137
- " Peveril of the Peak, 138
- " The Pirate 139
- " Quentin Durward, 140
- " Redgauntlet 141
- " Rob Roy, 142
- " St. Ronan's Well 143
- " The Talsman, 144
- " Lives of the Novelists 331
- " Poems and Plays 550 551
- Seebohm's Oxford Reformers, 665
- Seeley's Ecce Homo, 305
- Sewell's (Anna) Black Beauty, 748
- Shakespeare's Comedies, 153
- " Histories etc., 154
- " Tragedies, 155
- Shelley's Poetical Works 257, 258
- Shelley's (Mrs.) Frankenstein, 616
- " Rights of Women, 825
- Shoppard's Charles Auchester, 505
- Sheridan's Plays 95
- Siamonidi's Italian Republics, 250
- Smeaton's Life of Shakespeare, 514
- Smith's Wealth of Nations, 412, 413

- Smith's (George) Life of Wm Carey, 396
 Smollett's Roderick Random 790
 " Peregrine Pickle, 838, 839
 Sophocles' Dramas, 114
 Southey's Life of Nelson, 52
 Spectator, 164-7
 Spoko's Source of the Nile, 50
 Spencer's (Herbert) Essays on Education, 503
 Spenser's Faerie Queene 443, 444
 Spinoza's Ethics etc., 481
 Spyril's Heidi, 431
 Stanley's Memorials of Canterbury, 89
 " Eastern Church 251
 Steele's The Spectator, 164-7
 Sterne's Tristram Shandy, 617
 " Sentimental Journey and Journal to Eliza, 796
 Stevenson's Treasure Island and Kidnapped, 763
 " Master of Ballantrae and the Black Arrow, 764
 " Virginibus Puerisque and Familiar Studies of Men and Books, 765
 " An Inland Voyage, Travels with a Donkey, and Silverado Squatters 766
 " Dr Jekyll and Mr Hydo, The Merry Men, etc., 767
 " Poems, 768
 " In the South Seas and Island Nights' Entertainments, 769
 St Francis, The Little Flowers of, etc., 485
 Stow's Survey of London, 589
 Stowe's Uncle Tom's Cabin, 371
 Strickland's Queen Elizabeth 100
 Surtees Jorrocks' Jaunts, 817
 Swedenborg's Heaven and Hell, 379
 " Divine Love and Wisdom 635
 " Divine Providence
 Swift's Gulliver's Travels, 60 [658]
 " Journal to Stella— 757
 " Tale of a Tub, etc., 347
 Swiss Family Robinson, 430
 Tacitus's Annals 273
 " Agricola and Germania, 274
 Taylor's Words and Places, 517
 Tennyson's Poems, 44 626
 Thackeray's Emond 73
 " Vanity Fair 298
 " Christmas Books, 359
 " Pendennis, 425, 426
 " Newcomes 465, 466
 " The Virginians, 507, 508
 " English Humorists, and The Four Georges, 610
 " Roundabout Papers, 687
 Thierry's Norman Conquest, 198, 199
 Thoreau's Walden, 231
 Thucydides' Peloponnesian War, 455
 Tolstov's Master and Man, and Other Parables and Tales, 469
 " War and Peace 525-7
 " Childhood, Boyhood and Youth, 591
 Tolstov's Anna Karenina, 612 613
 Trenoh's On the Study of Words and English Past and Present 788
 Trollope's Barchester Towers, 30
 " Dr Thorne 360
 " Framley Parsonage, 181
 " Golden Lion of Granpere, 761
 " Last Chronicles of Barset, 391, 392
 " Phineas Finn, 832-3
 " Small House at Allington, 361
 " The Warden 182
 Trotter's The Bayard of India, 396
 " Hod-on of Hodson's Horse, 401
 " Warren Hastings 452
 Turgenev's Virgin Soil, 528
 " Liza, 677
 " Fathers and Sons 742
 Tyndall's Glaciers of the Alps, 98
 Tytler's Principles of Translation, 168
 Vasari's Lives of the Painters, 784-7
 Verne's (Jules) Twenty Thousand Leagues under the Sea, 319
 " Dropped from the Clouds, 367
 " Abandoned, 368
 " The Secret of the Island 369
 " Five Weeks in a Balloon and Around the World in Eighty Days 779
 Virgil's Aeneid 161
 " Eclogues and Georgics 222
 Voltaire's Life of Charles XII 270
 " Age of Louis XIV, 780
 Wace and Lammont's Arthurian Chronicles, 578
 Wakefield's Letter from Sydney etc., 528
 Walpole's Letters, 775
 Walton's Compleat Angler, 70
 Waterton's Wanderings in South America 772
 Wesley's Journal, 105-108
 White's Selborne, 48
 Whitman's Leaves of Grass and Democratic Vistas etc 573
 White Melville's Gladiators 523
 Wood's (Mrs. Henry) The Channings
 Woolman's Journal etc., 402 [54]

Wordsworth's Shorter Poems, 203
 „ Longer Poems, 311

Xenophon's Cyropaedia, 672

Yellow Book, 503

Yonge's The Dove in the Eagle's
 Nest, 320 (730)

„ The Book of Golden Deeds,

„ The Hoof of Rodolpho 302

Yonge's The Little Duke, 170

„ The Lances of Lynwood, 570

Yonge's (Arthur) Travels in France
 and Italy, 720

Anthologies Dictionaries etc

A Book of English Ballads, 572

A Book of Heroic Verse, 574

A Book of Nonsense, by Edward
 Lear, and Others, 806

A Century of Essays An Anthology,
 653

American Short Stories of the Nine
 teenth Century, 840

A New Book of Sense and Nonsense,
 813

An Anthology of English Prose
 From Bede to Stevenson, 675

An Encyclopedia of Gardening, by
 Walter P. Wright, 556

Ancient Hebrew Literature, 4 vols.,
 253-6

Anglo Saxon Poetry 701

Annals of Fairyland, 365, 366 641

Anthology of British Historical
 Speeches and Orations, 714

Atlas of Classical Geography, 451

Atlases, Literary and Historical
 Europe, 490, America, 653, Asia,
 613, Africa and Australasia, 662

Dictionary, Biographical, of English
 Literature, 140

„ of Dates, 651

„ Everyman's English,
 776

„ of Non Classical Myth
 ology, 632

„ Smaller Classical, 195

„ of Quotations and Pro
 verbs, 600-10

English Short Stories An An
 thology, 713

Fairy Gold, 157

Fairy Tales from the Arabian
 Nights, 240

Golden Treasury of Longer Poems,
 746

Minor Elizabethan Drama, 401, 402

Minor Poets of the Eighteenth Cen
 tury, 811

Mother Goose, 473

Muses' Pageant The, 681 606, 671

New Golden Treasury, 605

New Testament, The, 93

Political Liberty, a Symposium, 746

Prayer Books of King Edward VI.
 1st and 2nd, 148

Prelude to Poetry, 780

Restoration Plays, 604

Russian Short Stories, 758

Shorter Novels Elizabethan, 824

„ Jacobean and Restora
 tion, 841

Theology in the English Poets, 493

Thesaurus of English Words and
 Phrases, Roget's, 610, 631

NOTE—The following numbers are at present out of print

110, 111, 116, 228, 244, 275, 390, 418, 555, 597, 604

LONDON. J M DENT & SONS LTD
 NEW YORK E P DUTTON & CO INC.

